

MUNPIA



BREAKERS 취룡 퓨전 판타지 장편소설

# 브레이커즈 1

# **Breakers**

**- 브레이커즈 -**

**- Part 2 -**

**-Author-  
Chwiryong**

**[ Rainbow Turtle (Wuxiaworld) ]**

# Chapter 52

## Excavation

In-gong opened his eyes slowly. His head was still blank as he woke up from his sleep.

"Prince, are you still asleep?"

A green sight entered his blurred vision but it wasn't Green Wind's hair. Green Wind's voice wasn't so crude.

"Umm... Carack?"

The first thing he saw when he woke up in the bed was Carack. It was the correct answer as Carack's big and crude hands lifted In-gong up.

"Come, here is some cold water to wake you up."

He always started his day with cold water. In-gong swallowed the cold water given by Carack and started waking up.

"It is almost lunchtime."

The clock next to the mini-map showed that it was already 11:20 a.m. It was unusual since normally, he would never have overslept this long.

However, Carack's gaze was quite strange.

"What? Is there something on my face?"

Carack scratched his chin at In-gong's question and muttered,

"It is really amazing. How does a person know the time after just waking up?"

"I just know."

There was no need to explain about the features of his mini-map. Just like a good subordinate, Carack just nodded and brought him a washbasin instead of asking more questions.

"The other people?"

In-gong asked as he wiped his hair with a dry towel. Carack removed the washbasin and replied,

"They are working outside. It is almost time for lunch, so shouldn't Prince come out?"

"I will do that. I'll take a look around."

In-gong combed his hair, put on some outer garments and left the tent. There was a welcome face at the temple entrance.

"Your Highness."

"Yes, Karma. Good afternoon."

Once In-gong said good afternoon instead of good morning, Karma bit her lip like she was trying not to laugh. Somehow, her respect for In-gong had spread into a strange shape.

In-gong took a look around with Carack and Karma. Like Carack said, everyone was busy working.

The most important thing was to process the bodies.

Yesterday, this place was a battlefield. Their allies' bodies were cleaned up last night, but there were still the bodies of the casios and drake ogres.

Usually they would be left for scavengers, but this case was different. Hundreds of bodies were next to the temple where a miracle had occurred, so they couldn't be left alone.

The casios' bodies were dismantled into leather, bones, teeth, etc. On the other hand, they didn't know the identity of the drake ogres and how to dismantle them. Therefore, they were buried in the ground.

In-gong's gaze turned to the other side. Behind the temple was a small forest of treants.

The treants were taking in the sun like yesterday's movements were a lie. They seemed like ordinary trees.

'Still, it is noticeable.'

There was suddenly a forest in the grasslands.

After looking around properly, In-gong decided to visit Ferocious Eyes. It was to discuss various post-casios problems.

However, there was someone who was one step ahead of him. It was also in his head.

'My master.'

"Green Wind! Is your body okay?"

In-gong looked up and asked. As expected, Green Wind's shape didn't appear but her voice was slightly clearer than before.

"It is okay. I'm sorry our conversation got cut short last night.'

Green Wind had lost consciousness last night and turned into wind instead of waking up again.

It didn't matter since he could still feel Green Wind through Conquest, but it was comforting to hear her voice.

"It is fine. Do you remember what happened yesterday?"

'I remember talking about Master's power of Conquest. I don't know why, but... the remnants of Ainkel that remain inside me came to the forefront of my consciousness.'

"What about now?"

'I can't feel it now that it has subsided.'

There was regret in Green Wind's voice. She seemed to miss Ainkel's essence.

In-gong nodded thoughtfully.

'It is pointless to ask any more about Conquest.'

It was clear that last night's story about Conquest had evoked Ainkel's voice, but it was unlikely that Ainkel would appear again from the same thing.

'The king's power... and the Conquest Knight.'

That, itself, was a harvest. Elder dragons were more likely to have special knowledge about Conquest and a Conquest Knight. If not, there would have been no reason for Ainkel to wake up.

'I'll have to really explore the library in the Demon King's Palace.'

However, his merit level was still lacking to use the large library. He needed a little more time to investigate.

'I shouldn't be hasty.'

He needed to build up his merits and strength and he had to stop the Day of Massacre that Zephyr would cause.

The things he needed to do hadn't changed.

In-gong settled his heart and looked at the air again. He heard Green Wind's voice.

'Master, I want to tell you a story. Can you come to the small temple?'

"I understand, I'll do so."

'I'll be waiting.'

Not only Green Wind's voice but the wind circling In-gong disappeared. Feeling strange, In-gong looked back to see Karma's eyes shining like lanterns.



"Your Highness, were you talking to Green Wind just now?"

She asked in an excited voice. In-gong responded with his hand slightly raised, as if he was calming her down.

"Uh, it happened so suddenly."

"Oh, my god... Having a conversation so naturally at your age... It is great. Excuse me, but if Your Highness becomes a druid, you will surely be crowned with greatness."

Respect was shining in her eyes. It was burdensome, so In-gong turned his gaze away, only to see Carack having a different type of look in his eyes.

"Thank goodness. I thought Prince had gone crazy all of a sudden."

"I did."

In-gong shrugged and Carack laughed. Karma's eyes moved between them as she ate up their conversation.

"Anyway, I will be going back to the temple."

Karma quickly raised her hand and asked In-gong,

"Can I go with Your Highness?"

She was excited because she wanted to meet Green Wind. In-gong shook his head with a sorry expression.

"I'm sorry, but Green Wind wants to discuss something with me."

"I understand. Then I will protect the entrance of the temple."

Karma was slightly disappointed, but she still gave a spirited answer. Carack, who was watching quietly, interrupted the conversation.

"Prince, then I will go to Ferocious Eyes to sort things out. This needs to be reported to the Demon King's Palace."

Carack had completed In-gong's miscellaneous duties even when it was the Red Lightning tribe mission. In-gong gave a thumbs up to Carack, his all-rounder assistant.

"Yes, you are the best. I'll give you a present once we return to the Demon King's Palace."

"I'm looking forward to it."

Carack laughed and went his own way. Karma stared after Carack with envy.

'Is it due to the reward or does she want to go the Demon King's Palace?'

It reminded him of the drunk Karma from last night.

'Well, I really am thinking of taking her.'

However, right now, the meeting with Green Wind was more urgent. In-gong delayed the interview with Karma and headed to the temple hastily.

"Master."

He left Karma at the entrance and entered the temple alone, then saw Green Wind sitting between the tree trunks. However, unlike yesterday, her body was transparent. She seemed like the wind spirit that Felicia had called.

"Uh, is it difficult?"

In-gong asked as he approached the tree trunk and Green Wind shook her head.

"It's not like that. I am just saving my strength. After this conversation with Master, I will start working on replacing my parts."

"Then I'm glad."

In-gong sighed with relief and sat down on the bed. It was in order to converse with Green Wind.

Green Wind got in a comfortable position and said,



"Master, my conversation with Master yesterday was based on the premise that you are my temporary master. However, now I know that you are my permanent master. It is about something Master told me last night."

"Uh... Collecting the powers of the six dragons?"

"That's right. It was a story I didn't get a chance to tell you yesterday."

Green Wind rose from the tree trunk and reached into the air. Then a map of Enger Plains appeared before Green Wind.

"In the northernmost part of Enger Plains, there is a relic of Watcher Ainkel."

A bunch of lights started to form around the map. The shape was clear, so In-gong recognized it instantly.

"A shield?"

"That's right, it's Watcher Ainkel's Shield of Life. Just like Master's Earth Quaker, it contains the power of an elder dragon."

It was a shield but the shield had fairly colourful corners. There was a large green gem in the middle of a rhombus shaped grey plate and pieces of ash-white metal bordering it.

Green Wind pushed the map and shield to one side and told In-gong,

"It is a story from more than a thousand years ago. Watcher Ainkle gave the Shield of Life to the bravest and most righteous warrior among the centaurs. The warrior led the centaurs to fight against their enemies and won many victories, but he wasn't invincible. He was unharmed on the battlefield thanks to the Shield of Life, but he didn't carry the shield to his bed. He was killed while sleeping by a woman who coveted his shield."

He thought it was a warm story about a warrior, yet there was a surprising ending. Green Wind ignored In-gong's confusion and continued,

"The Shield of Life is something that Ainkel had given to the brave warrior. Due to this, no one other than the warrior can use or move the Shield of Life."

In-gong nodded. It was the same with Earth Quaker. The dwarves were unable to gain Enkidu's permission and were forced to leave Earth Quaker behind in the dungeon.

The centaurs in this story weren't much different.

"The warrior's loyal subordinates eventually abandoned the Shield of Life and returned. The Shield of Life was buried in the warrior's tomb in the north and over a thousand years have since passed. The Shield of Life became a legend and the centaurs attached the name of the brave warrior to the shield. White Eagle, that is the new name of the Shield of Life."

Green Wind finished her story and looked back at In-gong.

"Master, was my story good? Then please praise me. I am ready to hear praise."

Green Wind puffed up and smiled.

However, In-gong didn't respond. His mouth gaped open and he shouted while jumping up.

"White Eagle!"

Of course, he knew it. It was obviously a name in his memory.

It was a fantasy that existed in Knight Saga. In Knight Saga, it was a top-notch shield that couldn't be found despite In-gong challenging it many times.

'Yes, if it is in the northernmost area, then I wouldn't have found it.'

In Knight Saga, not all the land located in the north could be explored. Beyond the north side of the Demon King's dominated area, the demons lived in harsh environments. The reason why the casios headed south every year was because it was hard to live beyond the Northern Limit Line.

The Enger Plains were one of several areas in contact with the long stretch of the Northern Limit Line. The Northern Limit Line was virtually outside the Demon World, so it was a land that he couldn't travel to when playing Knight Saga.

‘White Eagle - it is a relic of an elder dragon.’

It contained the power of an elder dragon, but he was given a clue about where to find it. Moreover, In-gong had Ainkel’s strength, so it was clear that he could obtain it.

As In-gong clenched his fist with joy, Green Wind pouted,

"I am in a bad mood again. I am upset."

Then she kicked the ground and In-gong turned his attention back to Green Wind.

"Thank you for the great information. Do you know the location of the tomb?"

"I know it, but I don’t know the exact location. If I get closer, I will probably know."

In-gong nodded thoughtfully.

"Will it take three or four days to restore your parts?"

"Yes, but if I review it again, I think I can finish it faster. The life magic was activated due to the protection magic. That part relies on me less."

In other words, it would be easy to replace her.

"Okay, then please do so."

"I understand. I will start working on it straight away."

Green Wind said with somewhat slumped shoulders. At that moment, something flashed through In-gong’s head and he said quickly,

"Thank you, it was a really great story."

"It is late, but my pain has been resolved."

Her voice brightened. In-gong smiled involuntarily and said.

"Just let me know when it is done. I will compliment you again."

"I will expect it."

Green Wind smiled brightly and disappeared into the wind.

Once alone, In-gong flopped down on his bed and started thinking.

'I can use the task of punishing the casios as an excuse to go to the north.'

He didn't think of reporting everything directly to the Demon King's Palace. He had to hide the fact that he had conquered Green Wind.

'The problem is who will be dispatched from the Demon King's Palace.'

He couldn't hide the defense magic of the small temple. It was highly likely that the Demon King's Palace would dispatch an expert of harmful ruins.

'There is a person from Knight Saga that I want to see.'

If they still had the same value, In-gong wanted them. Someone would come anyway, so it was better if that person was someone he knew information about.

'The merit is likely to be reported today... At the latest, a specialist from the Demon King's Palace will arrive in a week to 10 days.'

It would take time to select and send the specialist. It might even be later than that.

'Maybe I should leave without waiting.'

There would be no problem because he could use the subjugation of the remaining casios as an excuse.

In-gong finished his calculations and headed out of the temple. He wanted to talk to Carack.

However, after three days, In-gong was forced to modify his plan. It was because the expert from the Demon King's Palace had arrived early. Moreover, the ruins expert was well known to In-gong.

"Felicia noona?"

# Chapter 53

## Excavation #2

“Felicia noona?”

"It has been a few days. It is nice to see you again."

It had only been five days since In-gong had left the Demon King's Palace.

Felicia and Delia, who entered the central room of the small temple where In-gong was staying, were as gorgeous as ever.

In-gong slightly shrugged and said,

"Noona, did the Demon King's Palace dispatch you?"

“Yes, I volunteered.”

Felicia answered before sitting down on the bed. Delia stood quietly behind Felicia like a shadow.

‘She planned this.’

He didn't know about Felicia's arrival until she came to the temple. This meant that Felicia had deliberately hidden her visit from him.

'She doesn't seem to have any bad intentions.'

Judging by her expression, it seemed she had wanted to surprise him as a joke. In-gong was familiar with Felicia, so he welcomed her appearance.

However, a separate question still remained.

“What about the Thunder Light Anvil?”

Felicia had gone to the Jishuka Mountains to investigate the Thunder Light Anvil. She wouldn't have gone back to the Demon King's Palace if it hadn't been for the court gathering.

Felicia laughed at In-gong and crossed her legs.

"I wanted to go, but you ended up finishing it too early."

They weren't just words. Felicia's eyes narrowed and she leaned her body forward.

"It was barely two days. Two days... Do you know that Chris and Caitlin haven't even left the Demon King's Palace yet?"

The casios subjugation mission was one that normally took at least 15 days. Sometimes, it took more than a month. They had to keep track of the randomly moving casios.

Yet the work this time had finished early. It was no wonder that Felicia and Caitlin hadn't left yet when word reached the Demon King's Palace.

'Indeed, in Knight Saga, I normally stayed for at least a week after returning to the palace.'

It was unusual for In-gong to leave for a mission so early.

In-gong nodded slowly as he was convinced by Felicia's words. Felicia uncrossed her legs, got up and approached In-gong.

"Shutra, right now, you are attracting a lot of attention."

Her voice wasn't playful anymore. Rather, there was anxiety in her eyes.

"Honestly, the casios subjugation mission is a difficult task. It is an annual event, so there isn't a high awareness of it in the Demon King's Palace. However, two days... that period is too short."

The first mission was always eye-catching. Moreover, the casios mission was a tradition that had lasted for a long time. There were many who knew about the casios mission, so they had no choice but to be surprised about the two day period.

"Moreover, the contents of the mission are too different from the usual. It has grabbed people's attention."

Drake ogres had appeared among the casios.

The casios had showed different movements from the usual.

Strong protection magic had been activated on the Enger Plains.

Just one of these was enough to attract attention and all of these were combined in a period of two days.

The three things combined in a two day period wasn't meaningless, but the important thing was the reaction of the people.

"It is a shock after the court gathering, which was only a few days ago. Everyone was curious about you and now you've thrown them something else. You are a very fresh and interesting person."

The details of which royal child was responsible for the mission and how they solved it wasn't a secret.

However, not everyone had access to these contents. The only person who knew In-gong's merit level was Isabella who was in charge of the Merits Department.

However, the situation had changed. The moment the demon king called In-gong's name, the world had changed. Many people knew of In-gong's first mission after the court gathering and they were exposed to this surprising news.

"So, why is Noona here?"

Felicia was embarrassed at In-gong's words and she turned her gaze to another place. Covering her face with a hand fan that she pulled out of nowhere, she said,

"Well, the other people would try to spy on you or take a bite out of you."

So, she had volunteered. It was to protect In-gong from any malice.



In-gong was sincerely touched and sent Felicia a warm gaze. That made it harder for Felicia to look at him. She looked around with embarrassment and continued speaking,

"That's not all. I am also interested in the magic of this temple that you have activated. There is also the purple light that wrapped around the casios... That's right, those are the reasons. That is why I volunteered."

"Thank you."

In-gong replied honestly and Felicia's ears started turning red. She sat back down on the bed and started talking about something else.

"Did the Tears of a Dark Elf help when you were fighting enemies?"

"Of course. It gave me a chance to win."

It wasn't just flattery but true words. The Tears of a Dark Elf had completely blocked Mustafa's mental attack, creating a gap for him to call Carack.

After In-gong finished talking, Felicia laughed with a very pleased expression.

"Of course. It is one of the strengths of a dark elf. Look forward to seeing more of its strengths in the future."

It really seemed like that, so Felicia felt good after hearing In-gong's words of gratitude. Felicia laughed and said,

"Anyway, you obtained nice merits this time. As I said earlier, it is the usual casios subjugation mission but the contents are completely different. If the temple can be used to defend Enger Plains from now on, then the merit will become bigger. Isabella said that."

Due to the nature of her job, Isabella maintained a fairly friendly relationship with the children of the demon king. In-gong suddenly had a question after remembering Isabella.

"Are Chris hyung and Caitlin noona well?"

"Chris is the same and Caitlin wanted to come along, but she had no justification for it. They told me to say hello for them."

In-gong laughed at Felicia's answer. This wasn't because of the news of Chris and Caitlin.

"You have become pretty close to both of them."

As soon as he asked, the answer had popped out instantly.

It was an atmosphere he couldn't imagine having when he had first met them during the Red Lightning campaign. It seemed like Chris was still somewhat distant, but she had completely befriended Caitlin.

Felicia blushed at In-gong's words and stood up.

"Anyway, both of them are ready to return to the land of the lycanthropes. They will probably leave the Demon King's Palace tomorrow or the next day."

In-gong nodded because he had already expected it.

'It is unfortunate.'

It was likely that it would be several months before he could meet the two of them again.

This regret was revealed on In-gong's face and Felicia spoke in a bright voice like she was comforting In-gong.

"Perhaps we should end the private meeting so the people stop waiting?"

Carack just blinked from where he was standing next to In-gong and Delia gave a faint smile. He knew that Felicia wasn't referring to Carack.

With the exception of some exceptional circumstances, they were an existence that were the hands of the royal children and kept their secrets. They talked with their most trusted counselors next to them.

In-gong understood and looked at Carack.

“Carack.”

“Understood.”

Carack opened the firmly closed door and brought in the person who had been waiting outside. It was Ferocious Eyes.

"8th Princess Felicia Doomblade, it has been a while."

“Yes, it has been a while.”

The two of them had already met during a previous casios subjugation mission. In-gong was able to feel the joy that both Ferocious Eyes and Felicia felt.

‘It seems like he is close to everyone except Zephyr.’

As In-gong thought this, another person entered the room. In-gong’s eyes widened as he saw the new person.

‘Daphne?’

The dryad Daphne, a child of one of the demon king’s concubines.

She was a beautiful girl with green skin and blue hair that looked like an illustration in a book.

Felicia introduced Daphne to In-gong.

“Have you ever met? This is Daphne, daughter of the 5th concubine.”

When looking at the status of the concubines, Felicia was ranked higher than the 5th consort. Daphne graciously introduced herself to In-gong.

“It is great to see 9th Prince. I am Daphne, the daughter of the 5th concubine Echo.”

“Nice to meet you, I am Shutra.”

In-gong received her greeting. Fortunately, her reaction showed that she had almost

no interaction with the previous Shutra.

Felicia spoke again.

"This work is also related to the guardian of Enger Plains. She is a very talented druid. She will be very helpful."

'Yes, she is certainly a competent druid.'

Among the children of the concubines, she was one of the best three talents that he wanted to get his hands on.

Daphne lifted her gaze gently and said,

"8th Prince, I heard that you have met Green Wind of the Enger Plains."

"Yes, I heard her voice. We fought together on the plains."

In fact, he had ended up conquering her after they met.

Daphne jumped at In-gong's reply. She took one step closer to In-gong and said,

"She has preserved the Enger Plains for more than a thousand years, but no one has seen her. Among the centaurs, isn't it extremely rare to hear her voice?"

Daphne was strangely excited while Ferocious Eyes nodded deeply.

"Almost never. Green Wind's voice hasn't been heard in the past few decades?"

Yet In-gong had met Green Wind. It occurred one day after he had arrived at the Enger Plains, beating the record of the local centaurs and satyrs.

"Great."

"Yes, it is great."

Felicia said with admiration and Ferocious Eyes agreed. Karma, who was standing in the corner, didn't open her mouth but her eyes showed she also agreed.

‘So, Master, treat me more carefully.’

Green Wind whispered in his ears. The others couldn’t hear her voice.

In-gong pretended not to know and Felicia brought up a new topic.

"Then Shutra, what are you planning to do next? This mission ended too soon, so it isn’t a good idea to return to the Demon King’s Palace. In the case of this mission, there is room for an extension."

It was obvious what she was suggesting and In-gong nodded.

"There are still remnants of the casios. Green Wind also wants to take care of them."

'Master, I never said that.'

Green Wind spoke again, but this time she could be heard by the others. Ferocious Eyes expressed his surprise.

"Is that Green Wind?"

"Yes, she is being considerate."

At first, he had intended to use scouting the north as an excuse but he changed his mind in a few days.

Obtaining White Eagle was still his top priority, but In-gong really felt the need to scout the north.

As Felicia had said, there were many strange things about this work. Maybe something unusual truly was happening beyond the Northern Limit Line.

In-gong thought of Enger Plains and the centaurs living there. For them, it was necessary to investigate the cause of this situation.

‘Of course, I also have to consider the merits.’

Moreover, In-gong had some doubts. The rampage of the casios and the participation of the drake ogres weren’t things that had happened in Knight Saga.

"Then I'll go with you."

"Ferocious Eyes?"

Ferocious Eyes looked around the room and then at In-gong.

"This occurred on Enger Plains. 9th Prince has prevented the immediate crisis, but many people are concerned about the future. If I go to the north with 9th Prince, the tribes will feel comforted."

It was quite reasonable. Felicia laughed and agreed,

"Okay, it has been decided. Then I will follow."

"6th Princess?"

Felicia winked at Ferocious Eyes' question and spoke to In-gong,

"Didn't I tell you? One of the reasons why I am here is to investigate the violent casios. Wouldn't it be better to investigate the living casios instead of the dead ones?"

That was also reasonable. It was what he had expected since Felicia appeared. So, In-gong had used the excuse of Green Wind. It would strengthen the reasoning behind the scouting mission.

"Then I will also join you."

Daphne carefully looked at both Felicia and In-gong. Then In-gong made a decision,

"Please do so."

Daphne smiled happily.

"Thank you. I will do my best to help Prince and Princess."

'Yes, I will use this opportunity to become friendly.'

In-gong became resolved again and looked at Felicia. She shrugged and said,

"We are both royal children but you are the representative. Look after me this time."

"Please take care of me as well."

Ferocious Eyes shook slightly and asked,

"9th Prince, when will we start?"

"There is no reason to lose our sleep. I recommend that we start tomorrow morning."

Due to the nature of the scouting, he didn't intend to go with many troops. Ferocious Eyes nodded.

"I understand. I will start preparing and carefully select the most outstanding warriors."

"Then today, I will check the temple with Daphne."

The last one to speak was Felicia. Each person's work was neatly decided.

The centaurs heard the news after the meeting ended. They were satisfied that In-gong was going with their chief and the satyrs appreciated the fact that the 6th Princess came here after the 9th Prince. It was proof that the Demon King's Palace thought about the Enger Plains.

On the day of departure...

There was one person who didn't look excited at the thought of the new journey.

"Carack, what is it?"

In-gong asked Carack in a small voice as he had Ferocious Eyes and 20 centaurs behind him.

Carack moaned and said, "I feel like something is going to happen... No, it is probably nothing. Let's depart."

Carack closed his mouth and looked straight ahead. And exactly three days later, in the



afternoon, Carack's words became a reality.

"This-! Why did you have to say that?"

"You are the one who asked!"

# Chapter 54

## Excavation #3

"This-! Why did you have to say that?"

"You are the one who asked!"

In-gong screamed at Carack after seeing the mini-map. There weren't just one or two red dots. There were more than 30 dots coming from different directions.

Almost all of them were casios. There were some drake ogres mixed in but not many.

'Remnants of the enemy forces?'

In-gong raised his head and looked around quickly. His companions, who had been setting up a camp, hurriedly pulled out their weapons as the casios and drake ogres came running.

It was an unreasonable guess since the monsters didn't have any identification marks, but In-gong felt like they weren't the ones who had fought at the same temple. It was because they were running like crazy with a purple aura surrounding them.

"Don't panic! Get ready for battle!"

Ferocious Eyes cried out fiercely. The centaurs held spears instead of bows and Delia blew a whistle to gather the dracos.

For the past three days, In-gong's party had never been attacked by an enemy. They had just found the corpses of the casios and drake ogres occasionally.

In-gong finished organizing his thoughts. Now wasn't the time to think leisurely. Like Ferocious Eyes said, it was time to prepare for battle.

Carack threw down the pile of firewood and picked up his dwarf axe. In-gong quickly opened his inventory and equipped Earth Quaker.

'Dragon Blood!'

A reaction came as soon as he opened the power of a dragon humanoid. Earth Quaker cried angrily as it emitted a red and yellow light and In-gong's white aura grew like oil had been added to fire.

However, that wasn't all. In-gong raised Earth Quaker and gave a loud shout,

"Green Wind! Magic!"

He called upon the support magic that Green Wind had used in the battle against Mustafa!

However, unlike his expectations, nothing happened. In-gong looked urgently toward his waist. Green Wind had a temporary home in a small piece of wood, so her voice was heard from it.

'Master, it is impossible. I don't have the strength right now!'

In-gong understood immediately. Green Wind had spent most of her power making a substitute of herself. He hadn't thought she would be so weak that she couldn't use her secondary magic, but now wasn't the time to think about such things.

'I will do it myself!'

[Battlefield Protection Lv1]  
[Grassland Reclamation Lv1]

It was the secondary magic that Green Wind had used in the battle over the small temple. It was level one, so it wasn't as powerful as before, but it was better than nothing.

A green wind wound around In-gong's limbs and his body felt lighter. At that moment, Green Wind exploded,

'H-how? Master, how can you use my magic?'

Instead of replying, In-gong gave Protection of the Wind and Grassland Reclamation to Carack. Green Wind's devastated voice was still buzzing at In-gong's ears.

'T-this is my presence...!'

The image of Green Wind in his head flopped down weakly, but he couldn't afford to worry about it right now. The centaurs at the edge were on the verge of collapsing under the casios.

In-gong raised a dwarf dagger with his left hand in order to use Below the King's Flag. However, before he could do so, screams rang from before him.

"Kyaaack!"

There were four women in the group and In-gong's gaze headed toward Delia who was riding a draco.

In-gong rushed out hastily after hearing the screams while Daphne screamed as huge monsters dived down from the sky.

Many things flashed through his head instantly.

The monsters, geist - a flying humanoid monster with the wings of a bat instead of two arms, were a vampire species that sucked the blood of their prey.

It went without saying that their goal was Daphne. A geist grabbed at Daphne with sharp legs.

In-gong immediately activated Aura. Explosive running speed unique to Beast Authority was triggered and In-gong moved in between Daphne and the geist, swinging his fist without any particular aim.

'Explosive Power!'

In-gong fist struck the upper body of a geist. He had used the skill urgently but the strength was enough.

The body of the geist, that had been floating in the air, flew out a few meters and slammed into the ground. In-gong also lost his balance and fell to the ground, but it

was only for a moment. In-gong's body recovered quickly and he rushed toward the geist. The geist was a man with a huge body, over two meters tall, but his body was light because he was a flying person.

In-gong had to finish it in one blow. A geist's most powerful close combat weapon was his large wings and sharp claws at the tips of his wings. The two wings were made of a special leather that was excellent in defense. Additionally, the battle could drag on for a long time if the geist flew up.

In-gong struck the geist's chest once again. In-gong's explosive power rushed out and cracked the geist's ribs; Earth Quaker was breaking his body. Blood spilled out as his chest literally caved in and he died.

In-gong breathed roughly. His aura was exhausted due to the explosive, but he could still afford to use it due to Dragon Blood.

"Kiaack!"

It was Daphne, not the geist. Daphne was shaking on the ground while Carack was standing in front of her. Thanks to In-gong's spell, Carack was surrounded by wind as he swung his axe at the geist rushing toward Daphne.

"Prince!"

"Fire Arrow!"

In-gong heard Carack's call and instantly cast a spell. A fire arrow extended from In-gong's left hand and flew straight at the head of a geist. The person blocked the fire arrow hastily with his wings.

The fire arrow exploded against the wings, but it was only a level one magic. So, there was only smoke and soot.

However, In-gong's intention from the beginning had been to seal the man's movements. Carack's weapon was a large battle axe and not a fist, like In-gong's. It wasn't long before it hit the wings.

Carack swung the axe like a cleanup hitter and smashed the geist. The geist screamed and fell onto the ground. Carack stepped forward and took the geist's head off with his

axe, just like he was splitting firewood.

"Kuraha!"

Carack raised his head and gave a battle cry. It wasn't a boast but to warn against any other flying geists.

After confirming that there weren't any more geists, Carack turned and approached Daphne who was panting on the ground.

"Young lady, are you okay? Can you stand?"

Carack asked impolitely without honorifics but in a kind manner. He stretched out a hand toward Daphne.

Daphne stared blankly before nodding slowly.

"I-I'm okay. I can stand."

Daphne swallowed her saliva and grabbed Carack's hands. Carack then pulled Daphne up at once. Instead of intervening in the battles occurring elsewhere, it seemed like he was devoted to defending Daphne.

Daphne gazed at Carack's trustworthy back and started to chant a spell. She used a druid magic unique to dryads.

When In-gong saw this, he went into a strange mood.

'What is this? There is a strange sense of deprivation.'

In-gong had tried to save Daphne and it was In-gong who had prevented the first attack.

Yet, what was that gaze? Shouldn't she be gazing like that toward In-gong?

'Perhaps, she doesn't like younger people?'

Or was it the shaky leg effect?

However, the important thing right now was Daphne's inexperience in battle. The Daphne that In-gong had known in Knight Saga wouldn't have frozen up like this before an enemy.

The gap in time between Year 512 and Year 513, which was the start of Knight Saga, seemed to be bigger than expected.

'Master, it isn't the time to be thinking! The battle hasn't ended yet!'

Green Wind's voice woke In-gong up and he looked around. Ferocious Eyes had a blue aura around him as he dealt with the drake ogres and casios while the centaurs were fighting fiercely.

Just like the battle against the Red Lightning tribe, Felicia didn't attack directly but restricted the enemy's movements with various spells. The casios slipped on the grass while the drake ogres sank deep into the ground.

In-gong decided to support Ferocious Eyes. Delia was next to Felicia, so Felicia would be fine.

"Carack! Watch Daphne!"

"Understood! I will protect her!"

While Daphne stared excitedly at Carack's back, In-gong rushed into the crowd of casios. Green Wind whispered into In-gong's ears.

'Master, I will strive to be helpful even without my power.'

It seemed to be an extension of what happened earlier. She didn't want to hear 'Yes, you are useless!' There was slight depression in her voice but In-gong dismissed it. It was because the group of casios was right in front of him.

The number of casios, drake ogres and geist was nearly double that of In-gong's party, but it was an almost one-sided battle due to Felicia and the overwhelming combat power of Ferocious Eyes.

Once the fighting ended, the casios were literally wiped out. On the other hand, there were no deaths in In-gong's party.



After confirming that the last casios had fallen under the hands of an elite centaur spearman, In-gong took a deep breath. The battle time itself was short, but he had a lot of fatigue because he had to focus on the battle.

Dragon Blood ended and Earth Quaker was returned to his inventory. Then he belatedly recalled Green Wind's words.

"Thank you, that was great help. You were very helpful."

'Thank you for telling me that. Although you are a bit harsh, Master is a good master.'

In-gong laughed after hearing her voice mixed with relief, resentment and gratitude. She had lived alone for many years, so she seemed to have a lot of pride.

After finishing talking to Green Wind, In-gong headed towards Daphne and Carack.

"Daphne, are you okay?"

Daphne responded quickly to In-gong's question.

"I'm okay. Thank you for saving me."

Her movements and voice were stiff, so it seemed like the effects of the battle were still with her.

"I'm glad that you are okay. Can you help with the treatment of the injured?"

"I understand."

Daphne ran instantly towards the centaurs. Although there weren't any casualties, there were some injuries that could cause death or loss of limbs if not treated.

As Daphne left, Carack spoke to In-gong,

"I didn't know that this was her first encounter."

"Huh?"

"That young lady said it. She was in shock throughout the battle."

Daphne was 16 years old. The children of the demon king usually performed missions from their early teens, but the children of the concubines were different. If they didn't volunteer, they didn't need to participate in any combat missions.

In-gong watched Daphne as she used recovery magic on the centaurs. Certainly, signs of shock could still be seen.

"Your eyes are good."

"You must have noticed quicker."

Carack smiled and looked In-gong up and down. It seemed like he was looking for any signs of injuries. Then a voice was heard from behind In-gong and Carack.

"Shutra, should I be jealous that you protected Daphne?"

The owner of the voice was Felicia. In-gong shrugged and replied,

"Delia was next to Noona."

Both Delia and Felicia laughed. Felicia moved closer to In-gong and said,

"Your strength was great. Did you become stronger?"

"Thank you."

During the three days traveling together, In-gong had told Felicia about Earth Quaker. There was a high possibility of a combat situation in the north. Therefore, he couldn't avoid using Earth Quaker as that would cause a sharp decline in his combat strength.

In-gong had thought of some excuses, including that it was a relic of the 5th Queen. However, in the end, he told her honestly that it was a weapon he had found in the same dungeon as the Thunder Light Anvil. He omitted that it contained Enkidu's strength but it was still the truth.

At first, Felicia seemed somewhat upset but that disappeared when In-gong apologized sincerely.

In fact, what he had done was quite common among the children of the Demon King.

As a specialist in ruins exploration, Felicia had gone to many sites and secretly taken many relics. She couldn't persecute In-gong for something she had done as well.

Felicia was more upset that In-gong had hidden this fact, that he had acquired Earth Quaker, from her.

There were factions among the royal children and subtle alliances between the different factions. Of course, it wasn't really important but information was often hidden.

Felicia didn't want to be in that type of bad relationship with In-gong and it was the same for In-gong as well.

'I am glad that it turned out well.'

He was determined to form a close relationship with Felicia.

While Felicia and In-gong were exchanging regards, Delia and Carack were speaking to each other. Ferocious Eyes neared the four people.

"9th Prince, 6th Princess, once the wounded soldiers are treated, we should move."

It definitely wasn't good to stay in one place after being attacked.

"Yes, let's do that. I will leave this place to Chief."

Ferocious Eyes' gaze moved from Felicia to In-gong. In-gong nodded and Ferocious Eyes ordered the centaurs to leave.

After 30 minutes of traveling, the group set up camp next to some collapsed stone walls.

Naturally, In-gong and Felicia were next to Ferocious Eyes. Felicia spoke first.

"Those guys, they were covered in a purple aura?"

"Does Noona know what it is?"

Felicia folded her arms at In-gong's question and replied,

"I can't say outright but... It was a really ominous aura. It felt like I was facing a curse magic."

"Curse?"

"Yes, a curse. Thanks to the purple energy, they became stronger, but their health was being exhausted. It is like raising strength by reducing life expectancy. Their emotions were also mentally neutered... It can only be seen as a curse."

Felicia was a competent magician, but she couldn't figure out anything else.

In-gong looked at Ferocious Eyes.

"Ferocious Eyes, it seems like the ones who fought at the temple aren't the only ones."

"I thought so as well. The geist are monsters that are hard to find on the Enger Plains."

There were more monsters apart from the ones who attacked the small temple. Perhaps, there were also more monsters, like Mustafa, who could use the purple energy.

Ferocious Eyes closed his eyes and said in a heavy voice,

"Maybe there will be a second attack."

Usually, the casios would come all at once, but everything was different this time.

In-gong recalled the group of casios he had met on the first day he arrived at Enger Plains.

The appearance might have been a strategic move for the centaurs to head in the wrong north-west direction, instead of going to the north-east where the small temple was.

If so, such an action wouldn't have been directed by Mustafa. There was a bigger

pattern behind Mustafa.

‘And there is one more thing.’

How did they figure out the true value of the small temple? The centaurs, who lived on Enger Plains with Green Wind as their guardian, hadn’t known about it.

In-gong had many questions. Felicia pressed a hand against her temples like her head hurt and spoke to Ferocious Eyes.

"It is worth going a bit further north, but what about defense?"

"I will send a few people back. The warriors of the other tribes haven’t been dismissed yet."

After the casios were blocked, the tribes were going to scatter back to where they lived. However, now wasn’t the time for that.

"Go to the north. We should go at least to the Northern Limit Line. Something will be there. Right now, we need information."

Felicia said and In-gong nodded. They had no intention of running away.

In-gong had to find White Eagle in the north and obtain information. Raising his head, In-gong looked towards the north.

# Chapter 55

## Excavation #4

The Enger Plains were very wide. Even the centaurs, who were very fast, needed a considerable amount of time to get from one end to the other end of Enger Plains.

Travelling from the south to the north, the elevation increased as they headed north. By the time they got to the Northern Limit Line, the place that the centaurs considered the end of Enger Plains, there was a high altitude comparable to a mountain.

The surrounding terrain also contained rocky slopes, wastelands and hills. It was because Ainkel's magic power weakened the further away it was from the small temple.

After five centaurs returned to the south, In-gong's group encountered more casios and geists as they moved further. He wasn't sure about what type of surprises there would be, but he was certain that they shouldn't spend that much time in the north.

They traveled a further two days towards the north. In-gong's group reached the point that the centaurs thought was the end of Enger Plains.

"The Northern Limit Line is a little further ahead, but we call this place the end of Enger Plains."

Ferocious Eyes said as he held his spear and gazed back and forth. He seemed to be drawing an invisible line.

Felicia explained further for everyone,

"The centaurs moved from season to season and the northernmost settlement is here."

The centaurs had a nomadic life and used the entire Enger Plains as their home. The environment got worse the further north it was. However, if the season was right, it was a good place to live.

Despite being the first time they came here, In-gong and Carack just nodded. However, Daphne showed a different reaction. After listening to Ferocious Eyes' and Felicia's words, she spoke with an uneasy voice.

"The strength gets stronger the closer we get to the north. I can feel the fear of the spirits."

Even In-gong shivered from the chills.

Daphne gazed at Felicia with anxious eyes. Daphne's condition worsened the closer she got to the Northern Limit Line. She was more sensitive than In-gong or Felicia to the atmosphere of the north because she was a dryad.

Green Wind whispered in In-gong's ears,

'Master, I can feel an ominous energy from the north. If the energy felt from the drake ogres and casios was a firefly, the energy from the north is like moonlight. The reason for the purple energy is probably there.'

In fact, that was the purpose of his party. Moreover, it wasn't just that.

'The tomb of White Eagle is in the vicinity. I can feel it. I can only tell the direction right now, but it is obvious that it is located before the Northern Limit Line.'

White Eagle was also nearby. They reached the de facto end of the Enger Plains, but they had to go a little further north.

Carack, who was unable to hear Green Wind's voice, turned around and asked,

"What do you want to do? We haven't found anything special for two or three days. Should we keep going?"

Delia used to frown at Carack's rudeness, but she was used to it now and just waited for Felicia's reply. Felicia turned away from the north and said,

"It is dangerous, but... is it okay to go back without confirming after feeling something so blatantly ominous?"

If they were going to return, what was the point of coming here in the first place?

Ferocious Eyes lifted a spear and pointed to the northwest.

"If we go that way, there is a watchtower built by my ancestors. It is somewhat collapsed, but it was originally made to watch the Northern Limit Line. If we don't get a clue when we go there, then we will return."

'Master, that is almost the same direction as White Eagle.'

Green Wind added.

White Eagle had been used by a brave centaur warrior who fought at the Northern Limit Line. It was natural for his grave to be near the watchtower.

"What is the distance?"

Ferocious Eyes visualized it in his head and replied to In-gong's question,

"If we move at the current speed, we will arrive in an hour."

It was early afternoon, so that distance was sufficient to visit.

"I will follow your judgement. Like I said before, you are the leader of this operation on Enger Plains."

Felicia told In-gong. She didn't want the burden, so she looked elsewhere. In-gong nodded.

"Okay, let's go there."

"I understand. I will take the lead."

Ferocious Eyes and the centaurs started to move at the same time. In particular, Karma moved next to Ferocious Eyes since her role was a guide. In-gong turned the draco towards that direction when he suddenly asked Carack,

"What is it?"

He had a strange look on his face. It was similar to his expression on the first day that



they departed.

Carack faced In-gong and shook his head.

"I won't say it."

However, In-gong already knew the answer just by his expression. In-gong sighed before smiling. In-gong also felt an ominous feeling, but it was time to move.

"Let's go, Maybach."

The draco immediately responded when In-gong called his name and he started running lightly after the centaurs.

"That is the watch tower.

Just as Ferocious Eyes said, they ran for an hour and saw a watch tower in the middle of steep mountains that stretched out like a folding screen. The outer wall was severely damaged and one side was completely stuck to the stone mountain. In the first place, it seemed to be a building made for the mountain.

"Let's go up."

Fortunately, the stairs were wide enough for the centaurs and dracos to climb up. Ferocious Eyes went up first to check the dangers and everyone else followed.

The watch tower was bigger than expected and the height of the top floor was at least 10 meters.

In-gong swallowed as he moved closer to an outer wall. A cold, dry wind blew against his cheeks.

With the instincts of a creature, he looked at one specific point. Not only In-gong but everyone close to the outer wall was watching a single place.

There was something in a spot hundreds of meters away. It was a huge purple flame, and the various monsters around it were engulfed in a small purple aura. There

seemed to be more than 200 creatures.

Green Wind had said that the flame was the source of her ominous feeling.

He heard a low scream the moment his intuition felt something. It was from Daphne.

“Young lady, are you okay?”

Carack rushed to ask Daphne, but she shook her head and didn’t answer. Felicia watched Daphne and said,

"I can feel the ominous aura directly. As I said before, this child is sensitive to it as a half-spirit."

In-gong retreated from the outer walls with the centaurs and they gazed at each other.

Daphne seemed to regain stability from Felicia’s words and said to In-gong,

“An undead. It is also an advanced one. At the very least, it should be a lich.”

Two types of undead existed in the Demon World. One was an undead that was naturally caused by the flow of magic through the Demon World. The other type was undead created by necromancy.

The naturally occurring undead were usually low grade ones, such as skeletons or zombies, but sometimes an object could create a powerful undead that surpassed that.

"It must be the culprit in this situation. There is an undead that’s this intelligent, so I have to go back and prepare. We need to inform the Demon King’s Palace about this situation."

That was the original plan. However, just when he finished speaking, Felicia suddenly looked back in the direction that In-gong had climbed up from.

“Felicia noona?”

"I can hear a sound from behind us."

Felicia’s ears pricked up. Her dark elf hearing was the best among the party.

The centaurs, including Ferocious Eyes, listened intently to the sound. It sounded like the ground was ringing.

Instead of waiting, In-gong asked Green Wind,

"Green Wind, can you share your gaze?"

When Green Wind brought In-gong to the temple, she showed her viewpoint. Green Wind had directly conveyed what she saw to In-gong.

'I'll try.'

"Go up to the sky!"

At In-gong's order, a green light sailed into the air. Green Wind looked at the south and in the next moment, In-gong swallowed a moan.

The mini-map was filled with red dots. Thanks to the shared view of Green Wind, red dots endlessly appeared inside the extended range.

"Shutra?"

"We're surrounded."

In-gong cried out after coming to a realization. From the beginning, it had all been a trap. A large number of monsters, including casios, had been hidden from In-gong's party throughout the north.

It was clear that the undead had been waiting for the moment to surround In-gong's party.

The undead could also share its gaze. This was a means of receiving information in real time from distant subordinates.

Otherwise, the elaborate movements In-gong was currently seeing wouldn't be possible.

"Escape! Enemies are flocking from everywhere!"

There were no questions asked. Carack picked up Daphne, who couldn't stand properly, and got on the draco. Felicia and Ferocious Eyes both looked at In-gong. In-gong nodded straight away.

"I'll lead the way! Run!"

In-gong looked simultaneously at the mini-map as well as what was in front of him. The siege was still forming. If they poked a gap, they could open a path to escape.

'Master! Look at the sky!'

Green Wind shouted when he first started running. In-gong looked up hurriedly at the sky.

"Kieeek!"

Five geists were gliding toward him. Ferocious Eyes quickly pulled out a bow and shot at them. An arrow pierced the neck of one while Felicia caused a sharp wind to divert the path of another one. However, there were still three remaining. The centaurs rushed to take out a spear or bow, but they weren't as fast as Ferocious Eyes. Two centaurs were unable to escape the attacks of the geists and fell to the ground.

"Just go!"

There was no room to save them. Ferocious Eyes shouted as he fired an arrow at a geist attacking a centaur on the ground. Like Ferocious Eyes said, there was no time to delay.

"Stick together!"

In-gong screamed loudly as he stabbed his dagger into the air. The power of Conquest rose like a storm.

"Below the King's Flag!"

A pure white light emerged from In-gong and wound around his companions. The legs of the dracos and centaurs were filled with an unhealthy power as In-gong's party ran at a faster pace than usual.

“Daphne!”

Felicia called out to Daphne. It was to ask for her dryad magic to help escape, but Daphne wasn't in a position to respond properly. She shook her head with a pale expression and trembling lips.

‘Master! That person! He is coming!’

There was no need to think. There was only one reason for Daphne's condition to deteriorate.

At the same time, a cold chill was felt from behind them. One of the centaurs couldn't resist the anxiety and turned around, only to let out a moan.

A huge undead with a purple aura around him was traveling through the air on a phantom steed. The head of the skeleton was covered with a large plate made of the bones of various monsters. The armour around his body was made of bones and his hands held a black sword. He was a monster that could be seen as both a warrior and magician.

At first glance, he was a huge five-meter-tall skeleton knight on a phantom steed. The man wearing black armour blew a horn, making bizarre noises fill the air.

He was still quite a distance away, but it seemed like he would catch up after a little while.

In-gong looked at the mini-map. The red dots didn't show a completely unified movement, so the control wasn't complete. They weren't moving following the path of In-gong's group but were moving as commanded.

‘Find the weakest spot.’

The moment that In-gong thought so...

“Kuraha!”

Carack shouted towards the sky. The geists were once again flocking in droves. Ferocious Eyes and the centaurs shot a series of arrows, causing many of them to fall.

However, that didn't slow them down. Furthermore, the surviving casios were blindly rushing at the party. A few centaurs were trapped by them.

The encirclement was narrowing. Every time the party had to take care of the geists, they slowed down while the huge undead was still behind them.

Finally, they could see the monsters surrounding them with the naked eye. In addition to the group of casios that were surrounded by a purple aura, there were monsters like zombies and skeletons.

Would they be able to escape? It was possible if they broke through this siege!

Kwaang!

There was a roar and the formation of In-gong's party collapsed. The huge undead had reached within 20 meters of the party and cast a spell. A huge blaze of fire poured from the sky and the explosion swallowed up a few centaurs.

The giant undead fired another ball of fire. This time, he aimed toward the front of In-gong's party and the dracos stopped with surprise. The draco carrying Carack and Daphne fell to the ground. The centaurs weren't killed but most of them weren't able to run.

A decision was needed. In-gong and Felicia exchanged glances. With no more words needing to be said, Felicia summoned the fire and wind spirits in both hands. A barrier made of giant flames was created in front of them. The wind spirit adjusted the size of the fire wall and the direction it spread.

It was a barrier that prevented them from retreating but also stopped the monsters surrounding them. In-gong jumped down from the draco and equipped Earth Quaker.

'Master! Do you mean to fight?

After Mustafa was destroyed, the monsters who lost the purple aura were mentally confused and their combat power deteriorated. Then there was only one way to survive the huge encirclement:

Defeat the giant undead. If he was killed, that purple aura would disappear and the encirclement would collapse.

‘Dragon Blood.’

The power of the dragon humanoid. Earth Quaker growled and entered its battle form as a white aura rose from In-gong’s body like flames.

# Chapter 56

## Excavation #5

Carack knew his role. He lifted his battle axe while Karma swallowed her saliva and glared at the undead skeleton knight in the sky.

Daphne was still shaking, but she was moving her mouth endlessly, pouring all her strength into a spell.

The dryad's blessing covered the entire party, including Below the King's Flag.

[Activation Lv1 has been learnt.]

Although In-gong hadn't activated the magic, he sensed that the spell Daphne used was at a much higher level. It was like receiving Heal when Felicia had used Massive Heal. The magic being used was an evolved form for the Activation skill.

'Spirit Enlightenment!'

It was a buff skill that raised all the stats using the power of the most suitable spirit. In-gong felt the spirit of life and spirit of wind enter him. In Knight Saga, only one spirit could nestle in a body at the same time. However, thanks to Protagonist Body, the powers of two different spirits could rest in In-gong's body.

The power of his body rose. It was the same for Ferocious Eyes, Carack, Felicia and the others.

As Carack was filled with strength, he grabbed the battle axe and stood in front of Daphne. Ferocious Eyes held a spear instead of a bow and activated his blue aura while the centaurs called out Green Wind's name.

The giant undead, Balkarova, looked down at In-gong's party and smiled. He had the face of a skeleton, but his emotions were displayed vividly. As he looked down on his prey, it was arrogance that was shown.



Balkarova jumped down from his ride and hit the ground. Thanks to the huge weight, the shaking of the ground was loud as the skeleton knight stood up.

In-gong could clearly see the height difference now that they were on even footing. Moreover, the purple energy around his body was much stronger than Mustafa. In-gong felt like he would be cut just facing him.

However, he had to fight. It felt like just yesterday that he had been fighting orcs, but now, he had to face this monster.

‘Indeed, a protagonist.’

In-gong didn’t hesitate to think nonsense in order to get rid of this excessive tension. Following Dragon Blood and Activation, the magic of Green Wind was added and he used Below the King’s Flag once again.

The flag of white light floated behind In-gong and a white light surrounded all the people in the vicinity. Daphne’s complexion became better and the centaurs, who had been barely able to face Balkarova, gained some bravery.

Using Below the King’s Flag twice exhausted him mentally but In-gong endured it. Now, there was only one thing left.

"Grassland warriors! Go!"

Ferocious Eyes shouted angrily and charged toward Balkarova. The centaurs ran toward the skeleton while Karma retreated to the rear with Daphne. Carack looked toward Felicia and Delia nodded from beside her.

"Karaha!"

Carack gave a war cry and joined Ferocious Eyes. Balkarova moved between the two of them while wielding his sword. The purple aura formed into dozens of sharp blades and stabbed at the two of them.

"Ohhh!"

The blue aura around Ferocious Eyes broke the purple energy. Carack, who had

escaped behind Ferocious Eyes, quickly rushed toward Balkarova after the purple aura was broken. Meanwhile, In-gong sprang up from the floor.

Carack struck Balkarova's leg with his axe, but the bones were so hard that, while holding the axe, Carack's arms shook terribly. Moreover, the purple aura rose like it was going to swallow Carack.

At that moment, In-gong caught Balkarova's eye. Balkarova's eyes blazed and the violet aura chased In-gong, not Carack.

A ball of fire flew from Balkarova's left arm. In-gong rolled on the ground to avoid the flames while Ferocious Eyes aimed at Balkarova.

"Kuoooh!"

The blue aura was concentrated on the end of Ferocious Eyes' spear. Immediately after shooting the ball of flames, Balkarova turned his head toward Ferocious Eyes and opened his mouth.

It was a type of breath attack. A purple pillar poured out from Balkarova and hit Ferocious Eyes.

Kwaaaang!

Ferocious Eyes was pushed away, but he wasn't hit directly by the violet pillar. It was thanks to the light pillar's power being alleviated by the quickly swinging spear.

Karma sighed with relief as she watched, but it was too early. Ferocious Eyes avoided a direct hit but couldn't prevent the additional effects of the violet pillars.

A wicked curse covered Ferocious Eyes' body. Below the King's Flag reduced the power of the curse greatly, but it did not eliminate it completely. The remaining bits of the violet pillars ate at Ferocious Eyes' flesh and health.

Ferocious Eyes further resisted the curse by activating his aura. Carack shifted Balkarova's gaze back to him by wielding his axe while In-gong attacked from behind him.

However, Balkarova swung his black sword at Carack. Carack ducked down to avoid

the attack and struck Balkarova's leg. Once again, he wasn't able to do any damage but it was enough to break Balkarova's balance.

Balkarova staggered for a moment. It was a movement that In-gong, who was behind Carack, cared about.

In-gong observed Balkarova. He turned his body to avoid five fireballs and activated Beast Authority on his left hand. As flames poured down, he evaded all five of them and aimed the explosive power at Balkarova's feet.

Kwaang!

There was a loud roar and a part of Balkarova's leg was broken. Balkarova staggered and Carack poured all the power of the earth spirit inside him into his axe. It wasn't as good as the elves, but the orcs had a high affinity for spirits. Carack struck Balkarova's other leg.

"Kuaaaak!"

Balkarova screamed and stumbled again. He burned the purple aura and Carack and In-gong moved urgently to avoid it. The grass, where they had been standing died, in an instant and the land itself turned completely black.

Balkarova gathered the energy and fired it from his mouth. If the first one was a pillar of light, then this time, it was a wave. Balkarova's first target was Carack.

"Carack!"

Just before the purple aura swept through Carack, In-gong called his name and Carack appeared in front of In-gong. Call was a skill that could only be used once every three days, but now wasn't the time to save it.

In-gong and Carack were then forced to split apart. Not only did the land, that was swept by the wave of light, turn black, poison had also started to rise from it.

The centaurs, who were fighting the creatures near the area of the purple energy, had their bodies melted down. It was horrible enough to be called a poison rather than a curse.

He finished spewing out the light wave and raised his sword toward In-gong. Receiving Balkarova's gaze, In-gong gathered his white aura on Earth Quaker.

It drew the focus of Balkarova's eyes and he didn't look anywhere else. He was only concerned with In-gong.

At that moment!

As Balkarova rushed forward, wielding his sword, Felicia finally used a spell. After casting the flame barrier, she had spent all that time preparing this.

Felicia was a magician who was unsuitable for direct combat, but that didn't mean she couldn't use any attack spells at all.

"Triple Blast!"

It was a powerful synergy attack that combined three properties.

A dazzling blue, red and yellow light emerged in a magic circle from Felicia's stretched out hand. It swirled and headed toward Balkarova.

'That's right.'

The moment that In-gong thought so...

Balkarova's body suddenly disappeared. Triple Blast penetrated through the air as In-gong looked back hurriedly. Delia, who was next to Felicia, screamed.

"Blink!"

It was a close range space jump magic!

Balkarova had never lost sight of Felicia. He was able to share the gaze of every monster that was surrounded by the purple aura. While Felicia had been preparing her magic, he also prepared Blink. He then activated it the moment Felicia unleashed her spell. He moved 10 meters from his original position and opened his mouth toward the defenseless Felicia. A purple pillar of light stretched out toward her!

Kwaaaaaang!

Once again, there was a deafening sound. The purple light scattered into many pieces as Felicia and Delia stared helplessly at a person in front of them.

“Ferocious Eyes!”

Instead of responding, Ferocious Eyes knelt down. His injuries were separate from the curse as he had to raise his aura hastily to prevent the urgent moment.

Laughter burst from Balkarova’s skull. Instead of aiming the sword directly at Felicia, he turned to In-gong while dozens of geists dived down from the sky. Their goals were Felicia, Delia, Karma and Daphne.

It was too reckless.

He couldn’t do anything, yet he couldn’t give up. In-gong continued gathering his aura on Earth Quaker. He still had Gigantic Piston remaining.

Balkarova laughed at In-gong. The casios and drake ogres were already gathered beyond the flame barrier that Felicia had created.

Carack grabbed his axe quietly and In-gong took deep breaths before his last rush.

It was at that moment...

‘Master!’

He heard Green Wind’s voice. However, it was strange. Her voice was too far away. It felt like she was barely reaching him from a distance.

In-gong touched his waist with his left hand reflexively. He couldn’t feel Green Wind in the small piece of wood. There was only a mere bit remaining.

When had she left and why?

‘Master! Activate Ainkel’s power! Shoot her power into the air!’

Her voice was too far away. It felt like she was using all her power just to reach out with her voice.

In-gong observed Balkarova and smiled for no reason. He closed his eyes and concentrated on the power of Conquest. It was crazy to close his eyes for a few seconds in front of an enemy.

However, he didn't care. In-gong just concentrated. He recalled the power he had felt when he became a dragon humanoid as well as the illusion of Ainkel that he had seen.

Watcher Ainkel.

The elder dragon with the power of life. The words she had said and the power she had given In-gong...

In-gong opened his eyes and Balkarova was charging right before him. In-gong unleashed the Gigantic Piston that he had gathered and stopped Balkarova's rush. Then he roared towards the sky.

It was similar to Aura. No, he honestly didn't know if he did it properly. The roar of a dragon humanoid filled the sky as Balkarova appeared before In-gong. He gave an eerie laugh and swung the black sword.

Then at that moment...

A terrible rumbling noise was heard from afar. A pure white and green light rushed through the air like a blade of wind.

They couldn't help looking back. Balkarova and everyone on the battlefield looked in the direction of the sound. It was preceded by wind. Traces of white and green moved in the air and passed by the geists attacking Felicia. Red blood spurted in the air from their necks and wings as the geists fell to the ground.

It was a beautiful trajectory. It fell to the ground at In-gong's and Balkarova's feet, causing Balkarova to retreat with surprise from the huge power of life it was emitting.

It was located in front of In-gong.

It was a shield. Pieces of white metal spread like wings while a green glow emitted from between the metal plates!

‘Master!’

Green Wind's voice was heard clearly. Her voice was heard clearly from White Eagle and In-gong was the only one who understood the situation.

Shortly after the battle began, Green Wind had left In-gong's side. She had headed for the tomb where White Eagle was buried and entered it.

It was unreasonable and reckless. There was a possibility that they would have been defeated before she reached White Eagle.

However, she took the chance and found White Eagle. She succeeded in awakening White Eagle and making it recognize its new owner by having In-gong activate Ainkel's power.

“Green Wind!”

‘Praise me later! Instead, you have a lot to do! A lot!’

In-gong laughed coolly. He could feel Ainkel's strength of life pushing at Balkarova's aura.

The antithesis.

In-gong knew instinctively what he had to do to fight Balkarova. He didn't delay any further and reached out toward White Eagle.

Green Wind and White Eagle flew over to In-gong's left arm. A gauntlet made of a white piece of metal formed on In-gong's arm and White Eagle, reminiscent of a kite shield, settled on top of it.

He didn't have to wait for the golden crowned white woman to speak. In-gong formed fists and invoked the power of Conquest.

Earth Quaker and White Eagle.

The strength of two elder dragons emanated from him.

---

Author's note:

In-gong doesn't know the name of the undead yet. As the author, I specified the name for the readability of the readers.

Mustafa is a similar case, but In-gong knew the name after the boss clear message came out.



# Chapter 57

## Excavation #6

The piece of Ainkel, which had been kept in the small temple, had transformed In-gong's body into a dragon humanoid.

Now, more of Ainkel's magic power was added to the dragon humanoid body formed from Ainkel's magic.

It was the power contained in White Eagle... Ainkel's magic power which had been kept for a thousand years!

Dragon Blood, which had already been in play, became even more powerful. A brilliant green light shone from White Eagle, where it rested on In-gong's left arm, and there was a roar from Earth Quaker on his right arm.

Life and destruction...

The power of Watcher Ainkel and the Great Enkidu!

Balkarova felt an instinctive fear. He was surprised at the unexpected power of life and moved backwards. Then he regained his mentality, looked at In-gong and suddenly pulled up the purple aura.

Breath weapon.

In-gong knew what Balkarova was doing. Instead of avoiding it, In-gong swung his left arm the moment the purple pillar poured out from Balkarova's mouth.

"Prince!"

Carack shouted and Felicia also gave a short scream. Ferocious Eyes tried to raise his body while coughing up blood.

White Eagle flashed.

Kwaaaaaang!

There was a roar and the purple aura spread everywhere. White Eagle left In-gong's left arm and blocked the violet pillar. The white metal pieces spread out like wings and emitted a green light. After colliding with White Eagle, the purple aura was broken and scattered.

However, Balkarova didn't back off. Once again, he poured out an overwhelming amount of purple aura. In the midst of breaking and scattering, the purple pillar had become thicker and more intense.

In-gong didn't wait. He moved to the side.

White Eagle was still confronting the purple aura, so Balkarova was confused by In-gong moving and leaving White Eagle by itself.

When he thought about it, he realised it was natural as In-gong wasn't holding onto White Eagle. White Eagle floated to the side and blocked the purple pillar. There was no reason for In-gong to stand behind White Eagle.

Balkarova couldn't conceal his agitation and hurriedly chased In-gong's movements with the purple pillar.

However, In-gong's movements were too fast to chase using that method. In-gong moved and circled behind Balkarova.

"Kuha!"

Balkarova gathered the purple aura hurriedly. It was painful because he was gathering it too hastily, but he didn't stop. He turned and aimed his left hand at In-gong. Fireballs poured out from Balkarova's five fingers.

Kwang! Kwang! Kwang!

The fireballs exploded, causing a deafening roar, but In-gong wasn't there anymore. In-gong had merely appeared at Balkarova's back before moving away while continuing to watch him. Meanwhile, a white aura was gathering on In-gong's right arm in preparation for Gigantic Piston.

Balkarova was very angry. He raised his sword and rushed toward In-gong with a momentum akin to a crashing car.

In-gong breathed in deeply. He was sweating, but he stood there and concentrated on Balkarova's movements. It was meaningless to move too early. Just as In-gong was looking at Balkarova, Balkarova was also looking at In-gong. It was like a bullfighter dealing with a raging bull at the appropriate moment.

The black sword Balkarova swung poured out lightning bolts. At that moment, In-gong moved. He ran to the front without fleeing backwards or sideways. He took a few steps to the side to avoid Balkarova's attacks and passed by Balkarova. In-gong focused patiently on Balkarova's movements until the end. He was capable of this due to the explosive speed of Beast Authority.

In-gong counted inwardly. Not only did he gather his aura on Earth Quaker, he also used the remaining powers he had left within him.

There was the spirit of life that Daphne's blessing had allowed to dwell inside him.

There was also Ainkel's magic power which contained the power of life.

He used both of them. Rather than pushing them onto Earth Quaker, which had the power of destruction, he circled the power around its surface.

This formed a white ring.

After putting on the power of life, it acted as a sharp trial for Earth Quaker. It was an unstable power, but In-gong didn't mind. He turned around, swung his left arm widely and White Eagle started flying again at In-gong's command.

Kakakang!

White Eagle flew over Balkarova's head. The white metal collided with the purple aura and Balkarova staggered.

It was truly a trampling!

"Kiaaaaaah!"

Unable to bear the anger, Balkarova swung his left hand at random and shot out fireballs again, while swinging his sword with his right hand.

Meanwhile, In-gong focused only on evasion. White Eagle flew to In-gong's side and blocked the spheres of flames while In-gong rolled to the ground to avoid the blade.

Balkarova tried to pursue In-gong, but he couldn't. Balkarova and In-gong weren't the only ones in this area!

"Kuraha!"

Fury had narrowed Balkarova's field of view and at that moment, Carack struck Balkarova in the shins with his axe which contained the power of an earth spirit. There was only a metallic ringing, but it was worth it. Carack's only aim was to draw Balkarova's attention away from In-gong.

"Kuha!"

Balkarova swung his left hand toward Carack. So far, Carack had dodged the attack, but he couldn't this time. Exposed to Balkarova's power, Carack was pushed back dozens of meters.

Despite the fact that it was only one blow, blood poured from his mouth and he stiffened from the purple aura. However, Carack didn't care. He saw Balkarova was still running toward In-gong and raised his upper body while coughing up blood. He shouted for his king.

"Karaha!"

In-gong responded to the battle cry. Previously, he had devoted everything toward evasion. However, now, In-gong ran straight toward Balkarova, who then used his breath weapon in desperation. White Eagle swirled around In-gong and defended him. Once again, the green and purple lights clashed and there was a deafening howl.

Kwang!

In-gong kept moving forward. Divine Beast Authority, which contained a brilliant explosive force, was used to compress the distance between In-gong and Balkarova.

Balkarova was approximately five meters tall. It wasn't easy to aim for his head or upper body because the height difference was too big. At this moment, Balkarova instinctively sensed something; he had to prevent In-gong's strike. He couldn't permit himself to be hit by the power contained in the gauntlet!

Balkarova raised his sword, but it wasn't for an attack. It was to protect his important upper body and head.

However, In-gong didn't jump forward. He aimed at Balkarova's legs like he had been doing so far.

Gigantic Piston screamed as it emerged.

It wasn't necessarily a frontal strike.

He aimed from below.

In-gong stopped right in front of Balkarova and punched the air with his fist. He couldn't strike Balkarova directly, but it was enough. The mass of white aura clung to Balkarova as he was swept away by the force of Gigantic Piston.

"Kiaah!"

With that, Balkarova's breastplate was shattered. Balkarova stepped back from the force of Gigantic Piston and the power of life took off the purple aura enveloping his upper body. It was only for a short time, but as a result, Balkarova's upper body was left defenseless for a while. It was right at this moment!

"Felicia!"

"Triple Blast!"

Felicia shouted the moment that In-gong cried out. A tricolour ray of light shot out once again from his outstretched hands.

There had been no promises. In-gong had simply believed in Felicia. He believed she wouldn't have given up and that she would find some way to win while watching the fight. She was a dark elf, Felicia Doomblade of Knight Saga!

Kwaaaaaang!

The blue, red and yellow light penetrated Balkarova's chest. There was a huge roar and hundreds of bone fragments flew everywhere. Balkarova's body cracked and a purple aura emerged from his eyes and mouth. It wasn't an attack. It was the release of the aura as Balkarova could no longer control it.

Felicia, who had prepared Triple Blast while In-gong prepared Gigantic Piston, didn't stop the eruption of her magic power. Using Triple Blast, not just once but twice, was painful for her.

Blood flowed down her jaws and tiny blood vessels in her arms burst, causing many bruises to form.

However, Felicia just smiled. She swallowed the pain and finished the magic.

Kwakwang!

The tricolor light exploded. Balkarova's bone armour was shattered and the aura that had surrounded him could no longer be seen.

However, Balkarova hadn't died yet. Instead of collapsing, he used the last of his power to lift his sword.

In-gong raised his left arm instead of avoiding it. There was no need for a command as In-gong wasn't alone in this moment.

'Master!'

White Eagle struck Balkarova's head and Balkarova started to crumble. White Eagle then turned in the air and landed on In-gong's left arm, just like a hawk landing on a hunter's arm.

That wasn't all.

Balkarova's knee was broken and Balkarova literally crumbled to pieces. The skeleton knights dealing with the centaurs also returned to death with terrible screams.

Ferocious Eyes looked at In-gong and chanted Green Wind's name, while Karma embraced Daphne with a silly smile.

Delia helped support Felicia and Felicia leaned on Delia, expressing both pain and joy.

Despite the blood, Carack laughed.

Hearing a familiar voice, In-gong was pleased.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Boss: Skeleton King Balkarova has been defeated.]

[Title: King Slayer Lv1 has been acquired.]

Level 19.

In-gong breathed out and a white light wrapped around him as Felicia released the flame barrier.

The master of the purple aura had died, so the monsters started scattering.

'Hmm, I am prepared. Now is the time for praise, Master.'

# Chapter 58

## Excavation #7

'Hmm, I am prepared. Now is the time for praise, Master.'

"Sorry, just wait a little longer."

He wondered what Green Wind's expression would be at his answer. In-gong imagined that she was quite disappointed but now wasn't a situation where they could easily talk.

In-gong searched the mini-map. Just like the battle at the small temple, the monsters who lost the purple aura started scattering. They hadn't headed their way due to Felicia's fire barrier but that wasn't enough. It was weak but there were still hundreds of monsters in the area.

In-gong closed his eyes. His stamina was restored due to the level up, but not his mental power. He used Below the King's Flag twice, used White Eagle and exhausted his concentration in order to avoid Balkarova's attacks. Right now, he felt like laying down on a bed and sleeping for 12 hours.

In-gong started thinking. Now, what should he do? Was it possible to break through the monsters with his troops?

Felicia was too weak to maintain the fire barrier. The flames had been maintained thanks to the fire spirit, but Felicia who maintained the spirit was weak so the power of the spirit weakened.

In-gong made a decision.

"Karma! Grab Daphne! Carack, can you stand up?"

Karma quickly lifted Daphne onto her back while Carack stood up. In-gong then looked at Ferocious Eyes and Felicia.



"Ferocious Eyes, run. We are going back to the watchtower."

"Under... stood."

Ferocious Eyes responded briefly and raised his body. Felicia was using recovery magic on Ferocious Eyes' wounds, but they soon understood what In-gong's meant.

It was hard to think of breaking through with their current exhausted power. It was obvious that there would a big sacrifice if they tried to get away.

Then he would rather go to the watchtower. It would be easy to defend while resting there, instead of crossing the grasslands.

There were now only nine elite centaurs left. Ferocious Eyes and the centaurs protected In-gong's companions as they ran towards the watchtower.

Fortunately, the monsters lost their controller and didn't think of attacking In-gong's party. The monsters were actually more wary of In-gong's party.

Although the watchtower was half collapsed, there were several floors with safe walls and ceilings. In-gong used various miscellaneous scattered items to block the entrance.

Carack helped In-gong with the entrance and gazed out a small opening.

"I don't think they will come here to attack. Rather, they seem to be busy fighting among themselves."

Felicia sighed with relief at Carack's words. Delia whispered to Felicia and approached In-gong.

"9th Prince, I will climb up and keep watch on the north."

When Balkarova was first discovered, more than 200 monsters had the purple aura around them. Thanks to the stone mountain, they couldn't attack In-gong's party but they might use a different path. Watching the north was the right choice.

"Okay, please do so."

"I am pleased to do it for Her Highness."

Delia smiled and headed upstairs. In-gong sat down and looked at everyone.

The centaurs were a mess. Some of them were quite severely injured.

Ferocious Eyes maintained his strong gaze, but his face also didn't look good.

Karma sighed with relief as Daphne lay on her thighs. She had been running on her two legs instead of riding a draco like In-gong, so it was natural for her stamina to be exhausted.

Instead of sitting or lying down, Felicia stood up and wandered around the centaurs. She was using recovery magic.

"Noona should rest."

Felicia was a mess. He could see all the bruises on her body due to the unique clothes of the dark elves.

But Felicia shook her head and responded with a mischievous voice.

"After I've finished the recovery magic. I am a princess."

She winked slightly in the end but seemed to be doing too much. Sweat was flowing down her forehead and her voice was full of exhaustion.

'Felicia is like this.'

She was a princess.

Despite that, she prioritized healing the centaurs rather than saving her magic power.

In-gong respected Felicia's will so he lay his body down in a more comfortable position. Carack sat at a window seat and stared out the window.

"Prince should close your eyes. I will watch the south."

"We'll do it in shifts so wake me up."

Carack was also tired. He coughed up blood a few times.

But Carack laughed and pointed to the centaurs.

“There are many people who can take over for me. We lived thanks to the royal family so shouldn’t you enjoy it?”

Although it was a cheap luxury, they received the highest level of treatment in this situation. It was foolish to be stubborn so In-gong decided to rest. Green Wind was beside In-gong.

‘Master, rest easy.’

Only In-gong could hear her but there wasn’t much reaction. Green Wind stroked In-gong’s forehead and he naturally closed his eyes. He fell into a deep sleep.

"So, this is White Eagle?"

Deep in the night.

Everyone was gathered around a small campfire. There were leftover meat, bones and leather from the casios in the corner. While In-gong was sleeping, the centaurs had gathered them from the battlefield.

In-gong lightly touched his belly and answered Felicia’s question.

"Yes, it is one of the reasons why Green Wind wanted me to go north."

Everyone’s gaze turned towards the White Eagle placed next to In-gong. The gauntlet and metal plates that made up the wings returned to their original positions, and it now looked like an ordinary kite shield.

But everyone had seen White Eagle in action. Ferocious Eyes stared at it.

"I never thought the legend of White Eagle was true."

The story of the brave warrior who fought monsters across the Northern Limit Line a thousand years ago.

That was the history that Green Wind told In-gong, but it was different for the centaurs. It was one of the legends they've heard since their childhood.

The eyes of the centaurs and Karma starting shining like lanterns. Felicia laughed.

"The guardian of Enger Plains really likes you. Can I see it just once?"

In-gong hadn't found White Eagle. White Eagle had flown to him.

Felicia didn't know the precise cause but she thought it was due to Green Wind.

Daphne also spoke.

"I feel a strong life force from White Eagle. Moreover, that... This is just my feeling, but I don't think all its power is revealed in this state."

In-gong immediately understood. It was the same with Earth Quaker. Both of them were restricting their strength to match In-gong.

'I need to become stronger.'

As soon as he became a dragon humanoid, Earth Quaker transformed one step higher.

Felicia stretched and said with a warm smile.

"Anyway, it is your Shutra. If you want I won't report it to the Demon King's Palace. Even if it is reported, it will be yours."

The Demon King's Palace generally didn't take away the royal children's achievements. While the Thunder Light Anvil was a historical relic, White Eagle was recognized as belonging to In-gong.

Ferocious Eyes looked at In-gong and said.

"Green Wind has stipulated that Prince is White Eagle's master. The centaurs of Enger Plains recognize 9th Prince as the successor of White Eagle. Whenever Prince wants,

we will be with Prince.”

He was the successor of the Great Warrior, who was an agent of Green Wind and led the centaur clan a thousand years ago. For the centaurs, In-gong was no longer the same as the other children of the demon king. He was a much more special presence.

Felicia stared at Ferocious Eyes but he didn't seem to be joking. In-gong thanked Ferocious Eyes and asked Felicia.

"Can I go to the tomb of White Eagle for a while? It is a sacred place so I think I should go once."

It was natural after receiving White Eagle. Felicia blinked and asked.

"You alone?"

"No, Carack as well. I don't want to stay here for a long time so I should go now."

They had to leave the watchtower and head south tomorrow morning. It was the middle of the night but he had the mini-map, so he was confident about going with just Carack.

Felicia sighed and nodded.

"I want to follow but it can't be helped. Be careful."

Felicia had severe body aches due to treating the others. She could talk, but it wasn't possible to run or walk like usual.

In-gong smiled and turned towards Ferocious Eyes.

"Ferocious Eyes, please look over Felicia noona."

"Leave it to me."

Ferocious Eyes replied heavily. In-gong didn't need to wait anymore so he instantly stood up.

"Let's go, Carack."

“Understood.”

In-gong got on the draco.

The tomb of the White Eagle wasn't far away.

Instead of rushing, In-gong looked at the mini-map and adjusted his movement speed.

‘My skill points are pretty good.’

It was natural since he gained two levels at once. In Knight Saga, he could get more skill points as his level went up.

‘In retrospect, it is a very fast speed.’

In ordinary RPGs, bosses and normal mobs were used to level up. In-gong couldn't remember leveling up so quickly in recent years.

In fact, the gap between bosses was too short.

As soon as he found the Thunder Light anvil and raised his level, he had gone to the Demon King's Palace. Of course, there was no fighting there.

After arriving at Enger plains, he had faced the casios and leveled up after obtaining Ainkel's power.

Soon after that, he fought Mustafa and gained another level.

‘Including the small temple and the fight in the north, isn't it five levels?’

If his level was still in the single digits then it would be a shame. But it was quite good since it was in the double digits. He just needed a bit more to reach level 20.

And the fight with Balkarova.

Thanks to the short interval between bosses, he leveled up quickly. But every single

battle was hard fought.

"Prince, I see it."

Carack's voice broke through his thoughts. He turned in the direction that Carack pointed and saw a pile of stones.

"It is completely smashed."

When he came up close, it was a mess. Most of the stone pillars were broken as White Eagle came out.

Green Wind whispered to In-gong.

'Don't worry, Master. The brave warrior won't be angry. Rather, he would want to Master to have it. A warrior's equipment is only worthwhile when dealing with the enemy on the battlefield.'

Then there was no reason to resist. In-gong took on the attitude of an RPG warrior breaking into a house and told Carack.

"Let's go."

This grave was a sacred place, but the main reason he came here was to collect the rest of the possessions.

Apart from White Eagle, there were several other magic artifacts. They were all used by the brave warrior when he was alive.

'The power of the White Eagle seems to have preserved the others.'

If not, it would have been hard to endure for thousands of years even with magic.

After a moment of silence, In-gong started to remove the stones. Carack moved a stone to the side and asked.

"Should I keep this a secret this time as well?"

"A secret. Ah, an axe. This is for Carack."

The first thing they found was a big battle axe. Carack felt the magic power of the battle axe and said with a grin.

"This is a secret that must be kept from the world."

In the tomb, there was a spear, a sword, and a ring. Although they were equipment worn by the brave warrior, their state wasn't as good as before.

Just like the axe earlier, the spear, sword, and ring had magic but each type was different.

'The axe has simple strength magic, the spear has limited recovery abilities once a day... even the spear?'

The sword had an enchantment to maintain the sharpness while the bow enhanced the wearer's eyesight. Even though the centaurs already had good eyes, with the bow, it was like having a telescope attached.

The basic performance of all four equipment was excellent. He didn't know what they were made of, but the material itself seemed to be special.

'One day I will be able to use it all.'

Even if he couldn't use them, he would still take them. In-gong even kept the giant sword that Balkarova used.

Once the excavation was complete, In-gong silently bowed towards the grave and started to rebuild the stones. It was the very least he could do for the brave warrior.

'Then it is time for the final thing.'

In-gong looked at White Eagle, and a green light emitted from the shield like it had been waiting.

Green Wind emerged from White Eagle. Carack was astonished by Green Wind suddenly appearing out of White Eagle while In-gong smiled at her.

"Well done. Good job. The best."



In-gong stroked Green Wind's head who was sitting on White Eagle... Green Wind blinked with a completely childish attitude.

"I feel bad but also good. Continue Master."

In-gong refrained from laughing as he kept praising Green Wind, while Carack's expression changed as he looked at the two people.

Green Wind disappeared with a satisfied face after being praised for nearly 10 minutes. Rather than the piece of wood hanging at In-gong's waist, her home was now White Eagle.

After placing all the equipment of the brave warrior in his inventory, In-gong gazed at the Northern Limit Line.

The purple aura had controlled the monsters in the north.

Was it all over now? Was Balkarova the cause of the purple aura?

Yet some doubts remained. Why did Balkarova attack the south? How did he know the secret of the small temple?

Beyond the Northern Limit Line. Things were happening beyond it.

"Prince, we should go back. Don't dwell on it any longer."

Carack said, causing In-gong to smile and nod.

"Yes, your words are true."

In-gong didn't linger. He had completed the mission by defeating Balkarova. The work beyond the Northern Limit Line would be left to the Demon King's Palace.

"Let's go, Maybach."

The draco started running towards the watchtower after In-gong spoke.

The moon was shining brightly in the sky.

It was dark and deep.

The Great Enkidu lifted his head to the sky.

He was an elder dragon born in lava, so he enjoyed looking down at the ground rather than up at the sky. But today, he faced the moon and stars in the dark blue sky. He heard a call from far away.

Enkidu.

"Ainkel."

One of the six elder dragons supporting this world. The first elder dragon to be killed.

Her death was a thing of the past and it had already been 1,000 years. But a part of her will still remained in the world.

The wind blew her whispers into Enkidu's ears.

Enkidu didn't say anything. He just gave a low roar and gazed up at the sky.

Conquest, war, famine, and death.

The Four Knights of the Apocalypse.

The time was approaching.

# Chapter 59

## Exception

After returning from the watchtower, the days passed by in a busy flow.

Felicia and Daphne investigated and studied the small temple. Meanwhile, Ferocious Eyes and the warriors of the other four tribes prepared to go back to the north. They were going to defeat the remaining casios on the Enger Plains, which hadn't returned beyond the Northern Limit Line after Balkarova was defeated.

It could be considered the beginning of the casios clearing task.

In-gong headed north with Ferocious Eyes. It was a real opportunity, so there was no reason for him to waste it.

Thus, a fortnight passed like this. In-gong returned to the small temple after sweeping the casios away. This was where Felicia greeted him.

"It hasn't been that long, but... you've become stronger. Your growth rate is scary."

Felicia said with a slightly bitter smile. She had felt it during the battle against the skeleton king Balkarova, but In-gong was much stronger compared to when he was fighting the Red Lightning tribe. The growth couldn't be explained just because of White Eagle.

In-gong replied somewhat painfully.

"I am growing up."

In fact, that truly was the case. There were those who grew rapidly after reaching the teens. There were other children of the demon king who showed explosive growth in the teens.

Additionally, In-gong had reached level 20 while taking care of the casios and Protagonist Correction reached level three. After investing some skill points, the levels

of Aura, Beast Authority and Divine Beast Authority increased by one or two.

Some magic also rose as a result of repeated training. He had repeatedly used Fire Arrow on the casios as well as Heal.

'Isn't it worth fighting Caitlin now?'

In-gong hadn't seen Chris or Caitlin's skills properly yet. Until now, In-gong's power had been weak compared to both of them. He wasn't sure about Chris, but he thought he was capable of a proper duel with Caitlin.

In-gong calmed down the excitement in his heart and started to look around the temple.

"How did your investigation of the temple go?"

There was a joyful look on Felicia's face. She told In-gong in an excited voice,

"I have been productive. Moreover, I discovered an incredible fact. Do you know what it is? Huh?"

"What is it?"

Felicia was so excited that In-gong was also interested. Felicia nodded with satisfaction at In-gong's response and came closer to him. It seemed like she was going to whisper a secret.

"The magic in the temple is that of Ainkel's, one of the six elder dragons. Ainkel!"

The whisper ended with a loud cry.

Felicia's eyes were shining and it was the same for Daphne and Delia behind her.

For the three of them, this fact was really amazing. The three people didn't know that the origin of Green Wind was a piece of Ainkel and that her power was in White Eagle.

In-gong wanted to say that it was great, but he could barely open his mouth. The three people were looking at him with bright smiles and expectant expressions.

“Wah! Really great!”

‘Master, it is awkward.’

After Green Wind’s words, he spoke in a more natural tone.

"Then that means it’s similar to the Thunder Light Anvil?"

"That's right, it’s similar. It is a remnant of an elder dragon."

Fortunately, Felicia was too excited and was convinced by his fake surprise and admiration.

She spoke quickly,

"I don’t know the relationship between Green Wind and Ainkel. However, it seems like it is Ainkel’s magic that summoned the treants. She had been analyzing the magic for a few days with Daphne and this is the result. I think it should be possible to control the treants and have them defend the temple and Enger Plains."

"That is really great, Felicia noona."

“Hum hum. Well, that's right."

Felicia raised her chin and enjoyed In-gong’s praise. In some ways, Felicia was similar to Green Wind.

Carack, who was watching Felicia and In-gong quietly, asked then,

"Uh, then will Prince and Princess leave the Enger Plains now that the work is done?"

In-gong had completed the counterattack against the casios and Felicia finished the temple investigation.

Felicia nodded.

"That is right. There is still a lot more to study, but I will postpone it for now. I have to go back and report to the Demon King’s Palace."

This year's suppression of the casios had been different from the previous years. Moreover, the ruins of an elder dragon had been found, so it was amazing.

"People will be quite surprised this time. It will show everyone that it isn't a coincidence that Abamama called your name."

Felicia knocked against In-gong's shoulders just like Chris always did. It was an act of fondness.

And the next morning...

After finishing the preparations to return to the Demon King's Palace, In-gong faced Ferocious Eyes and the other centaurs.

Ferocious Eyes stared straight at In-gong and said,

"9th Prince, you are the representative of Green Wind and the successor of the Great Warrior. When you need it, we will be your hands and feet."

His eyes were still fierce, but In-gong was able to read his heart now. Seated on the draco, In-gong held out a hand to Ferocious Eyes' and said,

"It is the same for me as well. Thank you for everything, Ferocious Eyes."

Ferocious Eyes shook In-gong's hand. In Knight Saga, he had always been an enemy but now, In-gong was a reliable ally.

After receiving the enthusiastic send-off of the centaurs, In-gong left Mighty Fire's base and headed to the transfer formation. He was accompanied by Felicia, Delia, Daphne, Carack, Karma and Green Wind.

Karma, who was his second subordinate after Carack, was leading the way.

Green Wind started annoying him in a different way.

'Master, I keep getting nervous.'

'Master, I am having chest palpitations.'

'Master, are we leaving Enger Plains like this?'

'Master, answer me.'

Green Wind was born on Enger Plains, so it was the first time she was leaving it. She felt nervous, insecure, anxious and irritated at the thought of going to a new place for the first time.

It took two days to move while handling Green Wind. Once they arrived at the stone tower, the next stage of the trip was quick. He climbed onto the transfer formation, closed his eyes, then opened them in another place.

"Felicia."

"6th Princess."

"Felicia unni!"

A situation similar to the last time was unfolding in front of him. Felicia's people had been waiting and rushed to welcome her.

Felicia smiled elegantly and welcomed the children of the concubines and subordinates that flocked to her.

Up until this point, it was very similar to last time. Then something different happened.

"It is great to see 9th Prince."

"I'm here to greet 9th Prince."

"I heard that you gained some great merits this time."

Last time, In-gong had been treated as nothing.

'Ohh...'

He could feel that things had changed. Whether they were sincere or reluctant, they could no longer ignore In-gong.

Felicia winked at In-gong.

Daphne was also there. Originally, she would have been a follower of Zephyr, but she now joined the children of the other concubines. Toward In-gong, the attitude of Felicia's people had become more polite and friendly.

"Prince."

Carack whispered and glanced at another place. In-gong was able to see what Carack was referring to in seconds.

Not everyone was welcoming In-gong. There were some who were looking at In-gong with discomfort and anxiety.

It was the reason why Felicia had volunteered to go to Enger Plains; it was the effect of the demon king, Mitra, calling In-gong's name.

'Aren't they mostly people on Anastasia's side?'

The 4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion - in Knight Saga, she had been known as the female Zephyr and had the largest of the three factions.

In-gong wanted to form a friendly relationship with the demon king's children who were not on Zephyr's side, but the world wasn't always that nice.

So far, there hadn't been much meaning in the other demon king's children being friendly with In-gong. Felicia and Caitlin had no intention of becoming the demon king. Although Chris was ambitious, he was only moving for the comfort of himself, Caitlin and the lycanthropes because he was king of the lycanthropes.

Therefore, the three of them were happy, rather than jealous of In-gong.

However, Anastasia was different. She led one of the three factions. For her, In-gong was a sudden stone rolling in her path. Children of the demon king who started to shine independently were merely targets.

'At least Felicia isn't Anastasia's person yet.'

On the Day of Massacre, Felicia and her brother had belonged to Anastasia's faction.



However, he didn't know the exact time they had joined.

It was currently Year 512. It was obvious that Felicia wasn't Anastasia's person at present.

Felicia hadn't talked about Anastasia that much and seemed to be closer to In-gong than Anastasia. If Felicia was Anastasia's person, Anastasia wouldn't have let that happen.

In-gong turned his attention back to Felicia. There were over a dozen concubine children and subordinates who had come to meet Felicia. It felt more like a social organization centered on Felicia, rather than a faction.

'They aren't much help, but can they be raised to help me?'

Three children of the concubines belonged to Felicia's family(?).

Felicia was older, but he couldn't remember their exact ages except for the fallen angel, Beiring.

There was Karapapa, a hulking yaksha, who appeared to be in his twenties, but was only in his mid-teens.

Anne Rose was the daughter of the fairy queen and in her early teens.

Beiring was a fallen angel with pale skin and black wings. He liked music and fine arts, so he wasn't very helpful in battle, but he was treated well in Knight Saga.

As a yaksha, Karapapa had muscles similar to Carack, but his red skin gave off a more intense expression. Karapapa's advantage was that he was stronger than he appeared. However, the downside was that he had no magical abilities.

The youngest, Anne Rose, had good potential, but the problem was that she was too young. She was only approximately 11 years old, so it was hard for her to be helpful right now.

'It is better than nothing. There is also Daphne.'

In-gong looked at Felicia's family with generous eyes. Felicia's family started gossiping

about what had happened in the Demon King's Palace while she was gone.

"Felicia unni, did you hear? There will be a court gathering again this time."

Anne Rose, who had colourful hair and butterfly wings, said excitedly. Felicia's eyes widened.

"Huh? This time as well?"

Although In-gong's merits were so big that it couldn't be compared to a general casios subjugation, that wasn't enough for a court gathering.

Were the rumours about the demon king's favouritism toward In-gong true?

Beiring laughed and explained,

"The court gathering will celebrate 6th Princess and 9th Prince's merits in conjunction with someone else's. It is said that this court gathering is for three people."

That made more sense. Another royal child must have earned a big merit.

Felicia asked again,

"Who is the other person that you are talking about?"

That was the exact question that In-gong had wanted to ask. Beiring replied with a smile,

"2nd Prince has come back."

2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros.

In-gong swallowed his saliva inadvertently.

# Chapter 60

## Exception #2

Zephyr Ragnaros:

The protagonist of the Demon World in Knight Saga;

The son of the demon king Mitra and 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros.

He was the most powerful of all the royal children and had the innate power of a demon king. He was cold and ruthless. He was the one who uncovered the 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight's secret about Caitlin's birth, causing the subjugation of the lycanthropes which was called the worst civil war in Knight Saga.

As a result of the lycanthrope subjugation, Chris, Caitlin, the 4th Queen and Caitlin's father Gallehed were killed and the lycanthropes were erased from the Demon World.

Then there were the other children of the demon king.

The children of the demon king had expended a lot of power in the lycanthrope subjugation while Zephyr held back and didn't suffer as much despite inciting it.

Zephyr had called Felicia and took the Tears of a Dark Elf. He then killed Felicia's older brother who had been the strongest protector of the dark elves.

The fates of the 3rd Prince Victor and the 4th Princess Anastasia hadn't differed greatly.

He hadn't shown any courtesy even to his older brother, 1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros, and he had murdered his half-siblings without any signs of emotion.

All the children of the concubines, even the ones who followed Zephyr, had been killed. No one with the blood the demon king had survived. Even Shutra, who was hiding from the Demon King's Palace, hadn't been spared.

The damage caused on the Day of Massacre had led the demon king Mitra to becoming exhausted.

After murdering all those with Mitra's blood, he had become the world's only successor to the demon king.

He had risen to the throne on the blood of those he had slayed and became the new demon king, mercilessly killing all those who opposed him. As soon as that was over, he had naturally launched an invasion.

Zephyr Ragnaros.

That was the story of the strongest and the worst demon king.

That was why In-gong had decided to become stronger. It was why In-gong was building up his influence using his merits.

In order for In-gong, Caitlin, Chris and Felicia to survive, he had to stop the Day of the Massacre.

'Zephyr.'

At the thought of meeting with him and standing with him at the court gathering...

It felt like he was suffocating. Despite the fact that he hadn't met Zephyr yet, he was filled with tension.

"Shutra?"

He heard a voice, but he didn't answer.

"Shutra, are you okay?"

Felicia's face appeared in front of him. Green Wind's voice then buzzed in his ears,

'Master, are you okay? You are sweating a lot.'

"Uh, yes. I just suddenly felt dizzy."

In-gong replied to both Felicia and Green Wind. Felicia looked at In-gong anxiously before saying with a bright smile,

"Tomorrow is the court gathering. Isn't it sudden just like last time?"

It was like that. He hadn't even had time to rest the last time.

'Surely, they aren't going to tell me to leave as soon as the court gathering is over?'

In-gong laughed bitterly at the thought. Felicia interpreted the meaning of In-gong's laugh differently and patted his shoulder.

"Go back and rest for today. I'll come around in the evening. Shouldn't you be well prepared this time as well?"

Felicia winked after her words. In-gong nodded.

"Yes, Noona should sleep well also."

"Yes."

Felicia knocked against In-gong's shoulders and turned around. Then Anne Rose smiled and said,

"Unni is friendly."

Anne Rose, Beiring and Karapapa were all making similar expressions. The three people turned their warm gazes toward Felicia. As always, her ears turned red.

'I think I know the nature of this family.'

It was clearly a non-political social gathering for the purpose of friendship in the Demon King's Palace.

In-gong watched Felicia, her family and Daphne leave, then boarded a carriage. It was a dark elf carriage drawn by dracos, not horses.

Carack informed the dark elf driver of their destination and sat down next to In-gong.

"Prince, are you okay?"

"Uh, just wait a little bit."

Carack looked In-gong up and down with uncertain eyes, but it wasn't because of injuries.

It was because Carack was worried about himself instead of In-gong.

"Ugh, do I have to wear clothes to the court gathering like last time?"

He recalled Carack dressed in a tight suit. In-gong smiled involuntarily. His worry about Zephyr was diluted as he watched Carack.

"If you are uncomfortable, then concede the court gathering to Karma."

He was conflicted between his desire to give the role to Karma and his duty, so he just sat quietly.

"W-what are you saying?"

'Master, can I go as well? I will go wherever you go.'

In-gong laughed as he heard Green Wind's voice. Nayatra and Sektum from Knight Saga weren't by his side but he didn't feel lacking.

Then at the next moment...

"Too nervous."

"Is that so? I'm also nervous."

"Time, just a little bit more time..."

They were the same words as the first court gathering.

Carack couldn't even sit down for fear of his clothes being wrinkled.

"However, didn't Prince say there was one more person?"

This time, there were three children of the demon king participating in the court gathering. They had been in the waiting room for a while but only In-gong and Felicia were present.

Delia had already adapted to Carack's rude method of speaking, just like Seira, and replied in a calm tone,

"I heard that 2nd Prince will enter the court gathering without going through the waiting room."

"Well, Zephyr oppa is special in many ways."

Felicia muttered with a slight frown. Although she called him oppa, he seemed to be a formidable person to Felicia.

Felicia, who was dressed in a backless red dress, looked at the clock in the waiting room and turned to In-gong. There was only one minute left until they had to enter.

Felicia took a deep breath before putting both hands on In-gong's shoulders.

"Even though Zephyr oppa is there, it will be nothing compared to your merits. Let's show everyone how cool you are."

He had heard almost the exact same words at his first court gathering. In-gong laughed.

"Are you trying to be Chris hyung?"

"Well, Chris isn't here today."

Felicia winked playfully and neatened his clothes. Then a palace employee opened the door of the waiting room.

"6th Princess and 9th Prince, please enter."

It was time. Felicia gazed at In-gong and he nodded, taking a step forward.

Once again, there were many people present at the court gathering. However, unlike the last time, the nature of their looks was different.

There were many people paying attention to In-gong. Not all the looks were pleasant, but it was a fact that they were paying attention to him.

There was a heavy silence as they all looked at one person. In-gong took a step forward. Like Felicia, he didn't smile, but he could afford to look around.

'Anastasia.'

The 4th Princess, a woman who led one of the three factions within the Demon King's Palace.

He looked at her. With light grey hair that looked silver, she had a different type of beauty from Felicia.

She was quiet and serene, yet bewitching.

In-gong didn't look at Anastasia for a long time. He stopped moving and knelt down.

After In-gong and Felicia, a voice was heard behind them.

"2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros, entering."

The door opened and footsteps were heard. In-gong couldn't look back, but In-gong could clearly feel it with every step Zephyr took forward. The intensity of the gazes had changed once again.

Then the footsteps stopped and In-gong heard a small noise as Zephyr went down on one knee.

If he turned his head and reached out, he could touch Zephyr.

"I will report the merits of the princes and the princess."



Isabella from the Merits Department spoke in a clear voice.

“2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros.”

Zephyr stood up as his name was called. In-gong still didn't turn his head sideways. Despite standing next to In-gong, he was still out of sight.

Isabella read out his merits.

His merits were also very impressive. Just Zephyr's merits alone would be worthy of a court gathering.

Isabella then called Felicia and In-gong's names in succession. This time, only a small number of people were surprised since the information about In-gong's merits were widespread.

However, that didn't mean that they took In-gong's merits lightly. In-gong's merits were in a special corner. Moreover, the story about the Northern Limit Line attracted everyone's attention.

Isabella finished reading the merits and at that moment, Isabella and many other people were nervous. All of them were waiting for someone's voice with a strange anticipation and anxiety.

“Shutra.”

A silent shock struck once again. The name of the 9th Prince emerged from the demon king's mouth once again.

Everyone concentrated on the next words of the demon king and there was a bigger impact than before.

"You have a mission."

The demon king didn't speak any further. He just looked at Isabella once and she understood his meaning. She swallowed her saliva and said in a soft voice,

"The 27th expedition led by General Kashubal has failed in securing the fortified city of Thunderdoom in the Dwarf Kingdom. 9th Prince Shutra, take the local troops and

remove any troublesome elements. Secure Thunderdoom.”

There was a silent scream. No, it was very small, but it leaked everywhere. The silence, which had been kept even when the demon king called In-gong’s name, was broken.

It was due to the contents of the mission.

General Kashubal was a draconian and the fortified city, Thunderdoom, was an important facility of considerable value in the ruins of the recently discovered Dwarf Kingdom.

It was a mission that a draconian general had failed. It was a mission natural for a prince with the blood of a draconian to undertake. There were rumours that Zephyr had rushed back in order to get the mission.

Yet the task was given to the 9th Prince. Furthermore, it was a direct appointment by the demon king.

Felicia had a pale expression as she covered her mouth and Anastasia’s eyes widened. Most of the people in audience were looking at the demon king.

However, the demon king just stared silently at In-gong. His gaze wasn’t as overbearing as last time, but it was still heavy.

Then In-gong felt another gaze on him...

Zephyr Ragnaros.

# Chapter 61

## Exception #3

If the first court gathering had caused waves, the second one was shocking.

The demon king had directly ordered a new mission at the court gathering.

This was unprecedented.

As soon as the demon king left the room, In-gong almost fled to the waiting room and covered his face with both hands. He sat down in a waiting room chair and breathed out a long sigh.

'What is the demon king thinking?'

Demon King Mitra.

He was the strongest among the sura that was known as the best combat species.

He was paying attention to In-gong and it wasn't just an accident.

He had noticed something about In-gong. The demon king had given In-gong a new mission... This wasn't common for the court gatherings. The development from the first court gathering hadn't exploded and leaked.

In-gong had once again realized the existence of the demon king from the first court gathering, something he hadn't paid attention to when he played Knight Saga. Although the demon king had showed up at the court gatherings, he had simply watched without speaking and never gave out any missions or commands.

The existence of the demon king was the final boss on the Day of Massacre.

However, people called the demon king the 'fake final boss'. The reason was that the condition of the demon king, Mitra, wasn't normal.

The demon king was suffering from a disease.

He didn't know exactly when, but it was likely that he had been ill the whole time in Knight Saga.

The demon king had hidden the disease, so hardly anyone in the Demon World had known about it. Even Zephyr, the main character of the Demon World, hadn't known about the demon king's disease until there was a direct confrontation.

If he had known about the demon king's illness, the Day of Massacre would have occurred much earlier.

For Zephyr, the children of the demon king had simply been 'enemies'. He had never once been afraid of Chris and the others who had strength.

However, the demon king had been different. Zephyr feared his power. He had aimed to surpass the demon king's strength and once he judged that he had accomplished it, the Day of Massacre occurred.

From In-gong's point of view, as someone who was trying to stop the Day of Massacre, it was good that Zephyr didn't know about the demon king's illness. Just like the secret of Caitlin's birth, he was going to keep the secret of the demon king.

'I don't know what the demon king is thinking. Is it good that he has an eye on me? Does he want to raise me to become Zephyr's rival?'

If he was the same as the demon king in Knight Saga, he wasn't crazy like Zephyr, but he was the demon king for a reason. He respected the law of the strong in the Demon World and took for granted that the strongest of his children would become the next king.

Even at the moment when Zephyr stabbed his chest, the demon king was pleased that Zephyr was able to surpass him, despite being angry at the deaths of the queens and other royal children.

'I don't know. I can't decide if this is good or bad.'

Looking back, it almost seemed like the demon king was trying to raise In-gong. The demon king might be giving support because he knew that In-gong had no background

with the death of his mother.

He recalled the eyes of 4th Princess Anastasia when she looked at him. 3rd Prince Victor, who was standing beside her, had a shadowed gaze.

And Zephyr, when In-gong glanced to the side, his face had been blank.

His face had been very stiff. It had only been for a few seconds, but In-gong remembered it clearly.

He hadn't been able to read any anger or wrath from Zephyr. Rather, it seemed like he felt somewhat pleased. It was just like the demon king at the first court gathering.

"Shutra, Shutra, Shutra."

Felicia flopped down next to In-gong and cried out. She almost seemed like Caitlin.

However, Felicia had a pale face instead of Caitlin's shining eyes.

She grabbed In-gong's arm and asked,

"That... He... Is Abamama painting a target on you? Isn't this going to cause you a lot of pain?"

In-gong opened his eyes. It could be interpreted in this way.

'Come to think of it, doesn't this seem right?'

Anastasia would almost certainly try to keep him in check now. In addition to Zephyr, the draconians were expected to make movements. The captains and other people in power would determine their attitude toward In-gong according to their factions.

It was likely that the demon king truly was making a target out of In-gong.

Maybe this was his method of nurturing In-gong.

In-gong cut off these thoughts for now. The information about the intentions of the demon king was too lacking. The situation was already like this, so he needed to face it.

"It seems like I won't be able to rest properly under Prince."

Carack complained. In fact, it wasn't wrong to say that there had been no period of rest since the day that In-gong had first arrived.

Felicia leaned back in her chair. Like In-gong, she sighed deeply and said with folded arms,

"Anyway, it is really extraordinary. Not only did Abamama give a mission but the mission was given to Shutra."

Her voice was quite serious. In-gong looked hastily at Felicia.

"What does that mean?"

Had there already been a person for the mission?

Felicia frowned slightly before saying,

"Didn't you hear that a general had already failed the mission? The mission was almost certain to go to Zephyr orabeoni. The general that failed is a draconian. Zephyr, who is a draconian, should be the one to resolve it."

(Orabeoni= more formal way to refer to an older brother.)

So, that was it. The shock was bigger than the last court gathering when his name had been called.

No one had expected the 9th Prince to be in charge of the 2nd Prince's task. It wasn't like In-gong had suddenly taken over Zephyr's task, but there was a precedence in this world. Felicia and everyone at the court gathering had thought that Zephyr would take on this mission.

In-gong remembered Zephyr's gaze.

He had a white face like a statue and dark red hair.

Zephyr resembled the demon king, thoroughly hiding what he was thinking.

Carack, who was still listening, raised his hand and asked,

"If a general failed the mission, then isn't it a very difficult task? What type of general is he?"

"General Kashubal is a intermediate level general below Vandal's rank."

Delia was the one who answered the question.

The independent structure of the Demon King's Palace was quite simple.

The five captains existed at the apex.

There were 10 senior generals below him.

Underneath those were 20 intermediate ranked generals and 40 low ranked generals.

Vandal was one of the 10 senior generals.

Carack scowled after hearing Delia's explanation. It was clear that it was a difficult mission if an intermediate general had failed.

In-gong's expression wasn't too different from Carack's. Felicia sighed and said,

"Well, it can't be helped. I'll go with you."

"Felicia noona?"

Unlike In-gong or Caitlin, Felicia could perform her own missions without any instructions.

Felicia snorted before turning her gaze to another place.

"It isn't just because of you, Shutra. The Dwarf Kingdom is one of my areas of interest."

In-gong laughed at Felicia's answer. He spread his arms wide and hugged her.

“Thank you!”

Felicia was surprised by the sudden embrace but didn't push In-gong away. She just smiled awkwardly.

Delia also smiled happily before Carack pulled everyone in the room back to reality.

"Then how did that general fail?"

Carack's question touched on an important point.

Felicia pushed In-gong away gently and glanced at Delia.

"Delia?"

"I will look into it as soon as possible."

Delia had arrived at the Demon King's Palace yesterday, so it was natural that she didn't know. However, her face was still full of remorse.

In-gong looked at Delia.

' I need information.'

Although Carack was capable, he had zero connections in the Demon King's Palace. Just like Felicia had Delia and Caitlin had Seira, it was necessary for In-gong to have a subordinate who could collect information in the Demon King's Palace.

'There are candidates.'

Among the children of the concubines, there were some that he thought about. In order to become informed, a network was necessary. Therefore, they needed to be people who stayed at the Demon King's Palace.

Felicia spoke to In-gong again,

"This time, there will be a few days to spare. Due to the nature of this mission, preparation is imperative."



It wasn't a scenario that required pushing enemies like the Red Lightning tribe and the casios. It wasn't so relaxing that he could just leave straight away.

"I will be going to the Merits Department tomorrow. I need to know my merit level and the mission schedule."

It was necessary to always visit the Merits Department at the beginning and end of a mission. Felicia nodded.

"Hrmm, then you can use the smithy and armoury. It is a good idea."

Even in the case of a royal child, various facilities in the palace weren't available if their merit level was too low.

He still couldn't use the library and magic laboratory even if all his merits were combined, but he could take full advantage of the armoury and smithy.

'Let's arm myself properly.'

In-gong was thinking about going to the smithy. He had Earth Quaker and White Eagle but no other equipment.

In-gong needed to arm himself as well as Carack and Karma.

Felicia spoke again.

"You didn't have time last time but it should be different now. There will be quite a few people who want to meet with Shutra."

There would be invitations to parties, encouragements to participate in hunting competitions or even requests for a spar.

There were a great many nobles in the palace, each belonging to different factions. He could face an unexpected political crisis when meeting people.

"This might be excessive interference, but... you shouldn't meet anybody this time. Go meet people when you have a little bit more time. Noona will introduce you to some decent people."

It was obvious that he was in her favour. In-gong knew that Felicia would take care of him very well.

However, she was talking about introducing him to people close to 3rd Queen Silvia Doomblade.

'Well, it is natural.'

In-gong's current strongest allies were Chris, Caitlin and Felicia. It was natural to become friendly with people on the side of the 3rd and 4th Queens and they were probably thinking similar thoughts.

"I will do so since I will be busy preparing for the mission."

Felicia nodded with satisfaction at In-gong's answer.

"Okay, then we should go back. I am tired."

Originally, the court gathering was a fun event for everyone to wear beautiful clothes. However, the mood had changed since last time.

In-gong stood up along with Felicia. Felicia was walking towards the waiting room door when she said to In-gong in a small voice,

"Although, I am a little bit envious."

"Huh?"

"I would like to have Abamama call my name."

In-gong blinked and Felicia raised her head. She spread her fan and covered her face.

"Let's go."

In-gong stepped out of the waiting room with Felicia.

"I would like to join you on this mission."

# Chapter 62

## Exception #4

"I would like to join you on this mission."

The next morning, two people came to visit In-gong, who happened to oversleep.

One person was familiar while the other one was unfamiliar, but he could soon remember the name.

'Cadaroph?'

One of the children of the concubines. In-gong wasn't sure, but the person was clearly a siren.

'A male siren.'

Sirens were a beautiful species that lived in the sea. They were famous for being powerful people who were able to naturally gather magic power in their voices in order to lure people.

Standing before In-gong, Cadaroph was also a powerful voice magic user. He was a teenager. The young siren had blue hair, twinkling eyes and a cute appearance, but In-gong wouldn't allow himself to be seduced by a male or female siren.

"I'm sorry, I have already decided who will go on this mission. I will borrow your strength at the next opportunity."

In-gong answered with moderately reasonable words as he placed his hand on Cadaroph's shoulder and smoothly led him out of the drawing room. Cadaroph blinked a few times at being kicked out of the drawing room before nodding like it couldn't be helped. Daphne still remained in the drawing room.

"Eh?"

"Have a safe trip."

In-gong shook hands with the bemused Cadaroph and closed the door to the drawing room. Flora would send Cararoph back.

Daphne bit her lip as she watched and asked in a slightly nervous voice,

"Can I go with you?"

"We should go together. Look after me this time as well."

In-gong answered calmly as he sat beside Daphne and thought of the process that had brought her here.

As expected, Cadaroph had stuck to Daphne in order to enter the drawing room.

Yesterday, after the court gathering, In-gong had returned to the mansion and ordered Flora and his servants to graciously refuse all visitors except for Felicia, Delia and Daphne. It was in order to minimize unnecessary encounters like Felicia had proposed yesterday.

In-gong hadn't kicked out Cadaroph because he was a male siren. Cadaroph was the unnecessary meeting Felicia was worried about.

Cadaroph was a hidden follower of 4th Princess Anastasia and among Anastasia's followers, he was an especially enthusiastic follower. However, he was hidden because Cadaroph's abilities laid in 'spying'.

When In-gong played as Zephyr, Cadaroph had always approached him with a bright smile and then as always, he had tried to betray In-gong at a crucial moment.

"That Cadaroph came to me?"

He didn't think that Cadaroph would have suddenly changed from Anastasia to In-gong.

Frankly speaking, compared to the other children of the demon king, In-gong's merits were still not worth a lot. He had made a strong impression due to the shocking incidents at two court gatherings, but that wasn't always a good thing.

Daphne had come back after seeing him directly on Enger Plains.

In-gong was currently attracting a great deal of attention for his achievements and growth. So, it was possible that he would keep growing like this.

However, shining like this was also dangerous.

The children of the concubines went to whom they thought was closest to becoming the demon king. Their futures depended on it, so it was still too risky to bet boldly on In-gong.

‘He was someone who listened to Anastasia until the end, even when Zephyr was winning. He wouldn’t have joined me so suddenly. Rather, the important thing is the other side.’

Even if he was a spy, the possibility that he had come to In-gong on his own accord was low. It had obviously been a command from Anastasia.

‘It is a little too weak to be an attempt to keep me in check... Maybe she’s just keeping an eye on me?’

Either way, it didn’t change the fact that Anastasia was starting to notice In-gong.

In-gong recalled Anastasia from the court gathering. She had been eerily beautiful, but she was as strong as her beauty. Her nickname was the female Zephyr.

‘This is all because of the demon king.’

As he cursed the demon king who put him in this situation, In-gong returned his attention to Daphne.

He gave her orders to prepare meticulously in order to leave the Demon King’s Palace quickly.

"So, where are you going?"

After sending Daphne off with her orders, In-gong quickly replied to Carack’s question.

"I will go to the Merits Department."

"It is great to see 9th Prince."

"Hello, Isabella. Were you surprised yesterday?"

In-gong greeted her with a smile and Isabella smiled back.

"It was amazing. It was huge. Is Prince okay?"

She asked with a little bit of worry as the demon king had done something unexpected yesterday. In-gong sighed and answered,

"I will leave it to your imagination."

It was a playful answer, so although Isabella raised her eyebrows, she didn't express any more concerns. Actually, it was pleasing when he stepped back and looked at it. The demon king had shown an interest in In-gong and not anyone else.

Isabella asked with a friendly smile,

"Do you want to hear about your achievements or the new mission first?"

"I'll check my merits first."

"I understand."

[9th Prince Shutra Agnus]  
[Merit Level: 5 -> 10]  
[Cumulative Merits: 15,000 -> 35,000]  
[Currently Available Merit Points: 33,000]

[Merits related to participating in the Red Casios Expedition]  
-Discovered the temple belonging to the guardian Green Wind.

- Repeled the group of casios.
- Repeled the group of drake ogres.
- Solved the 1st abnormal situation.
- Guessed the cause of the anomalies [Undetermined/Undead].
- 1st grade merits against the casios.

[9th Prince's merit has risen to level 10.]

[The facilities available to use inside the Demon King' Palace has increased.]

[The monthly allowance has increased from 500 gold to 900 gold.]

'Oh, isn't this better than the Red Lightning tribe expedition?'

In fact, he had expected it to some extent. The Red Lightning expedition wasn't a mission exclusive to In-gong. Moreover, senior general Vandal had been involved in the mission, so it had to be evaluated in a general way.

On the other hand, In-gong had been in charge of the casios subjugation as Felicia had emphasized repeatedly. Moreover, he hadn't acted as indirect support like last time. Instead, he had found the solution directly, so his merits obviously had to be better.

'It means this strange situation has a lot of value to the Demon King's Palace.'

It was due to the mysterious purple aura that had emerged from beyond the Northern Limit Line.

Isabella clasped her hands together and said,

"Once again, I really admired Prince's merits. The casios subjugation is an annual mission, so no one expected it to become such a big deal."

It made a lot of sense. In-gong had never even imagined that this would have happened.

However, there had been one person who caught onto it.

Perhaps the demon king knew? Did the result of this event have some significance to the demon king?

He was still missing too much information. Therefore, In-gong focused on the things in front of him.

"9th Prince, shall I send the rewards for your merit level to the mansion like before?"

"Please do."

He gained five levels, so he should receive a lot of rewards this time. He didn't want to show his inventory ability, so he chose to have it delivered.

"I understand. Is there anything you want to use your merit points on?"

"Not here but somewhere else. I will go to the smithy and arsenal."

"Indeed. Your merit level is now high enough to use several facilities in the palace. I hope you get a lot of good items."

"Thank you, then can I ask you about the mission?"

"I understand. The mission outline is the same as what I said yesterday."

[Dwarf Kingdom Thunderdoom Exploration Mission]

[During the development of a mine, a path leading to Thunderdoom was discovered. Secure the passage to Thunderdoom and explore the inside of Thunderdoom.]

[\* Please depart from the Demon King's Palace within the next seven days.]

The few lines of text were followed by a map made of light. In-gong was familiar with the place.

'It really is Thunderdoom.'

He had already visited it in Knight Saga. However, the point of difference with Knight Saga was the time of discovery.

'It won't be the same.'



Quite a few things about the elder dragons had already changed from Knight Saga.

"General Kashubal lost his life during the Thunderdoom investigation. According to the report, poisoning from toxic gases seems to be the main cause of death. You should prepare for it."

In-gong nodded. Whenever he entered Thunderdoom in Knight Saga, he had always carried various detoxification items with him.

'In the first place, the mine was closed due to the toxic gases.'

It fit with the story, but why? It was a little odd.

General Kashubal... In-gong had never met him in Knight Saga, but had he truly not had any about the toxic gases? Or had he been accidentally injured despite the preparations? Either way, it was a wasteful end for an intermediate general.

'I hope that Delia finds out more information.'

In-gong nodded and finished his conversation with Isabella.

"Thank you for the advice. Then I'll be going now."

"I will be waiting happily for Prince's next visit."

In-gong immediately headed to the eastern part of the castle that contained the armoury and smithy. He still had Felicia's carriage from yesterday, so he didn't have to encounter anyone while travelling.

The armoury at the Demon King's Palace could be divided into two major areas. One was an area where mass-produced weapons and equipment for soldiers were stored. The other was a treasure trove of equipment for commanders, nobles and royalty.

Of course, In-gong headed toward the latter area.

Just like Isabella, Igor from Knight Saga was still in charge of the armoury.

"It is great to see 9th Prince. You have a merit level of 10, so the first treasure house is available to you. It is a principle to consume merit points when purchasing anything, but it is also possible to buy separately with money."

In-gong smiled as he entered the first treasure house with the small demon imp.

The treasure house was incredibly large. It was almost ten times the size of the armoury found in the Thunder Light Anvil dungeon- no, it was twenty times the size.

Moreover, unlike the dungeon armoury that was empty in some places, the palace armour was packed tightly without any empty spots. It was like a department store of weapons.

It was surprising for In-gong even though he had already encountered it in Knight Saga. It was also new for Carack and Karma, so their eyes widened with shock.

In particular, Karma gasped like she was having a heart attack.

"C-can I really take all of this?"

Karma stuttered at In-gong as she carried the items he picked out. There was a chain mail with lightning magic, a silver helmet and gauntlets. It was gorgeous equipment she could never imagine wearing.

However, In-gong just replied casually,

"Yes."

Karma's eyes bulged but this much was nothing for the Demon King's Palace.

'This is the palace of the demon king.'

It was the center of the Demon World. In-gong felt apologetic but the Enger Plains, where the centaurs lived, couldn't compare to it.

Carack declared proudly,

"Don't hesitate to take it. We have to become strong enough to help the royal family."

His words made a lot of sense. Carack put on a black helmet that matched his armour and carried a big magic shield on his back. He had already gained some items from missions, so he didn't need anything more.

In-gong chose leather armour that resisted attacks of various attributes for himself. Divine Beast Authority used explosive movements, so metal armour, that was heavy and hindered the body, didn't match. Chris and Caitlin also wore leather armour.

He used exactly 15,000 merit points for the three of them. Most of it was used for In-gong's armour and Carack's shield.

'I shouldn't save merits on equipment.'

And this was only the beginning of his merits. Once he returned from this mission, he might be able to access the second treasure house.

'Okay, okay. Now, I seem like a prince. This is a knight.'

In-gong was about to leave the armoury with a pleased expression.

'Master, what about me?'

'Master, you seem to only be discriminating against me.'

'I am also green but Master likes that orc better.'

Green Wind's voice hit In-gong's ears. In-gong laughed and asked in a mischievous voice,

"What would you like to have?"

'Eh...'

As expected, she didn't have an answer. It wasn't always possible for Green Wind to materialize in reality, so she didn't need any armour or weapons.

Green Wind moaned because she was speechless and In-gong laughed again.

"I'll praise you when we get back."

'Master, I didn't do anything to be praised.'

"Then I won't."

'W-well, it isn't bad to be praised for no reason.'

In-gong restrained himself from laughing. Igor didn't know about the existence of Green Wind and was looking at In-gong with uncomfortable eyes.

After leaving the armoury, In-gong headed toward the smithy. Karma thought it would contain dozens of craftsmen sweating in a huge smithy, but in reality, it was a neat office similar to the Merits Department.

The place where orders were received didn't have to be the place where they were made.

The lizardman Kator, the blacksmith, received In-gong's requirements one by one and confirmed them.

"Are you talking about a greave (for the shins)?"

"Yes, a greave."

In-gong's demands were somewhat different from the usual greaves. It might be better to call them combat shoes.

Beast Authority and Divine Beast Authority weren't limited to hand techniques. There were as many foot techniques and kicks as there were hand techniques.

The greaves in the armoury were meant to protect the legs and were hindrances when it came to fast foot techniques.

His greaves needed to be as light as possible in a shape that didn't interfere with the movements of the legs and ankles. They also needed to be enchanted with a variety of magic.

After reviewing In-gong's requirements again, Kator replied,

"Well, okay. It is a simple structure, so it shouldn't take that long."

"How long will it take?"

"Two days should be sufficient."

Karma's eyes widened again after hearing it would only take two days. They weren't just normal greaves but magic greaves. Yet it would only take two days? It was unthinkable on the Enger Plains.

However, this was natural to In-gong. In-gong thought about his remaining merit points and asked,

"What materials would you recommend?"

"I could make it with dragon leather and scales."

"Huh?"

In-gong was shocked by Kator's words. Dragon leather and scales... They were the finest materials that In-gong couldn't afford with his current merit points.

'Is he joking right now?'

However, Kator was serious. He looked at Carack and Karma standing behind In-gong before saying in a slightly lowered voice.

"Some materials arrived this morning in the name of 9th Prince. It is enough to make your order."

"Materials came in my name?"

"Yes, that's right."

This was common in Knight Saga. Zephyr's supporters, including those from his mother's family, often gave him presents.

However, a gift had come for Shutra?

'Perhaps the gandharva?'

Even though they were weak, they were the type of people capable of producing a queen. In-gong's face was full of expectations.

"Can you tell me who sent it?"

Kator took a deep breath instead of replying, then he answered in a quiet voice,

"Ishgard."

Carack and Karma's eyes opened wide at the same time. Even the two of them, who were from remote areas, knew that name.

Sword Duke Ishgard:

A legend who represented an earlier era.

He didn't belong to any of the queens' families.

He was the paternal grandfather to all the children of the demon king;

An elder of the sura, the strongest combat species.

# Chapter 63

## Breakthrough

When talking about the strongest species in the Demon World, the first one to be mentioned were the dragons.

The dragons, king of all beasts and flying animals, were different from other species since the time of their birth. The dragon's skin and leather were the finest armour and the intimidation and power that came from the dragon's gigantic body were stronger than any other monster's.

Just based on their body, they were the best species, but dragons also had powerful magic. Unlike other species that had to learn magic, a dragon learnt magic as naturally as breathing. It was said that dragons themselves were magic as they were born in magic and life.

Therefore, the dragon species was the strongest species. When talking about the average strength of a dragon, there was no species in the Demon World that surpassed it.

However, it was the sura, not dragons, who were called the strongest combat species in the Demon World.

The sura had fewer numbers.

They were born like the dragons and were no different from the other species.

However, among them, there were monsters that destroyed the limits.

Demon King Mitra.

Undeniably, he was the strongest presence in the Demon World.

Additionally, there was the elder sura who brought him up.

Before the demon king, Mitra, there was Ishgard who represented the previous era.

Not all sura were strong, unlike the dragons.

However, there were those among them who truly transcended the limits and that was why they were called the strongest combat species.

After finishing his order, In-gong left the smithy and sighed as soon as he reached his carriage. It was due to the excitement of the two people with him.

“Please calm down.”

Carack’s eyes were shining and it was the first time he had seen the usually calm orc like this. Meanwhile, the excited Karma was almost breathless.

Karma took deep breaths after In-gong’s words, but her face was still red. Panting slightly, she asked,

"Does the Sword Duke feel some favor toward Prince?"

Sword Duke Ishgard.

The walking legend who had many stories about him. He was one of the demon king’s teachers and the strongest of the sura until the demon king came along.

The fact that he was called the ‘Sword Duke’ explained what he was:

The Demon World’s best swordsman. In the Demon World, there was a legend that there was nothing he couldn’t cut with his sword.

It had been more than 20 years since he entered retirement, yet there were still many who remembered his name and legends, just like Carack and Karma in front of him.

The Sword Duke Ishgard had sent a gift to In-gong. Additionally, it was dragon leather and scales.

They weren’t things that could be sent easily, even for the Sword Duke. Dragon leather



and scales were the finest materials that were hard to find in the Demon World.

"It is really reassuring if the Sword Duke is behind Prince."

Carack said with a laugh while Karma nodded enthusiastically.

"Well, I hope so."

It wouldn't be too bad to have outside support. In this situation, if the sura were behind him, he wouldn't be jealous of the others who had the support of their mother's side.

However, he wondered why it had happened so suddenly. It was virtually impossible to receive the support of the sura in Knight Saga. In-gong wouldn't have been surprised if it was from his mother's family.

This was uncommon, so doubts were raised in the midst of his joy.

'Is it just because the demon king showed interest?'

That was the simplest reason and, at the same time, it was also a good reason. It was true that the demon king was showing an unprecedented interest in In-gong.

It shouldn't be surprising that Ishgard, the demon king's master, showed interest in In-gong too.

Additionally, in retrospect, it wasn't the same as receiving the sura's whole support. Sword Duke Ishgard was just expressing a private interest. If so, anything could happen.

'Ah, I don't know. Anyway, it is good.'

Although it was confusing because it hadn't happened in Knight Saga, it wasn't strange if he looked at the reasons. So, it was good.

Moreover, this gift had been sent privately, so he wouldn't receive any unnecessary attention from the other royal children.

"Shouldn't you go and say thank you?"

"I'll have to prepare."

The problem was that no one knew where the Sword Duke lived. There were rumours after his retirement but no specific residence was ever revealed. The gift was sent to the smithy, so he didn't have a way to say thank you or to give him a note.

'If he is really interested, he will contact me again.'

In-gong organized his thoughts and turned his attention to something else.

'Gandharva.'

He wondered what they were doing.

'I have to investigate.'

He couldn't ask Felicia, but he could use Carack in many ways. If Carack asked Daphne or Delia while saying it was his personal interest, In-gong could get some answers.

After reviewing all these considerations, In-gong took a deep breath and relaxed his posture. He wanted to soothe his weary mind and body.

'I'm really looking forward to it.'

Greaves made of dragon leather and scales... they would turn out better than he had first imagined.

'Won't it be at least a B rank?'

No, it might be A rank.

In-gong smiled widely, followed by Carack and Karma. Green Wind felt isolated from the three people and thought of the praise she would receive after they returned. Naturally, all three of them would join in.

After returning to the mansion by carriage, In-gong headed immediately to the

drawing room. He heard from Flora that Felicia had arrived.

He opened the door of the drawing room to see Felicia and Delia elegantly drinking tea.

Felicia nodded to In-gong and asked him,

"Did something good happen?"

"No, it is nothing."

In-gong erased the wide smile from his face and sat down on the opposite side of Felicia, while Carack took a seat next to In-gong. Karma was about to stand but took courage from the fact that both Carack and Delia were sitting down and sat down in a corner.

Once everyone was seated, Felicia put down her cup and said,

"Delia has been doing research, but there isn't much more information than what you should have heard from the Merits Department. It is best to just be thoroughly prepared before entering."

The intermediate general, Kashubal, had been poisoned by toxic gases that leaked from underground and died.

It was hard to find out much more information from the Demon King's Palace. In-gong nodded and Felicia leaned closer to him.

"Shutra, how much do you know about the Thunderdoom Fortress?"

It was a quiet voice. In-gong quickly realized why Felicia was acting like this. He had pretended not to know about ruins while finding the Thunder Light Anvil. She was curious if he was once again an expert on these ruins.

'Having the same hobby is always valuable.'

In-gong gave a short laugh as he shrugged and replied,

"Aren't they the dwarves that fought dragons?"

"Huh? What does that mean? Fight a dragon? Didn't the dwarves guard Enkidu's treasures?"

Carack asked with wide eyes. Previously, Delia would have thought Carack was rude. However, now, Delia and Felicia just stared at Carack curiously.

"There are many dwarves. The Dwarf Kingdom, where Thunderdoom Fortress is, fought to defend their cities and treasures from dragons. In fact, they even knocked down a few dragons."

Carack's eyes widened even further at In-gong's answer and declared with astonishment,

"K-killed dragons?"

He couldn't believe it. In-gong was confused but Felicia instantly knew why Carack was reacting like this. She laughed and said,

"Carack, dragons are different from elder dragons. You can even call them different species altogether. It isn't easy but dragons can be killed."

Carack had seen the illusion of the Great Enkidu given by the Thunder Light Anvil. It was natural to be surprised if he thought that a dragon was the same as an elder dragon.

"Oh... Then Princess is also able to catch a dragon?"

Carack's eyes shone as Felicia turned her gaze elsewhere. She covered her mouth with her fan and said in a low voice,

"Well, given enough time and budget..."

"She can't catch it."

"Shutra, I hate you."

Felicia complained cutely while Delia and Karma both laughed.

After crushing Felicia's pride, In-gong explained to Carack.

"It isn't common to fight dragons. They aren't elder dragons, but they are huge and excellent at magic. The Dwarf Kingdom, including Thunderdoom Fortress, was eventually destroyed fighting the dragons."

"Huh, still, they are a manly race. I'll have to see the dwarves again."

He was burning with a strong fighting spirit.

Like Carack said, they were indeed a manly species.

'Thus, they were destroyed.'

In-gong swallowed the bittersweet tea that Flora served him.

Likewise, Felicia drank the tea before speaking again.

"Among the fortresses in the Dwarf Kingdom, the Thunderdoom Fortress is quite powerful. The name has been mentioned several times in Dwarf Kingdom-related artifacts. If we can excavate it properly, it will be a really big jackpot."

Felicia's eyes burned ambitiously and it was the same for In-gong.

'Yes, it definitely is a big jackpot.'

Thunderdoom Fortress, one of the so-called honey pot dungeons of Knight Saga...

The fortress' location hadn't been known for a long time because the battle with the dragons had buried all the walls, including the entrance.

The dwarves hadn't been prepared for migration, so many high quality items, gold and silver were piled up inside the fortress.

It was a difficult dungeon but the rewards were high.

Moreover, it had more value to In-gong now than it had in Knight Saga.

'The dragon slayer series of weapons.'

The dwarves of Thunderdoom Fortress had been experts in fighting dragons. They fought against the dragons until the end, so many in the army specialized in killing dragons.

Among them, the dragon slayers were special. They used special weapons that were deadly to dragons.

Zephyr had the blood of a dragon and a dragon humanoid. Assuming that he would face Zephyr one day, Thunderdoom Fortress was a place that he absolutely had to conquer.

‘I might also have to fight with Locke.’

Locke, the brave warrior who had the soul of a dragon... Similarly, the dragon slayer weapons were like a special drug.

It was a little bit strange, but it was also to protect himself. In-gong himself was a dragon humanoid. He would collect all weapons that could harm him in advance. In fact, he had done so when he played Zephyr.

‘If I can’t get into Thunderdoom Fortress, Chris and Silvan will end up carrying dragon slayer weapons.’

In-gong nodded as he kept his thoughts to himself and Felicia smiled brightly.

The following afternoon:

After collecting the Dragon Scale Greaves from the smithy, In-gong’s party left the Demon King’s Palace.

Their destination was Thunderdoom Fortress.

# Chapter 64

## Breakthrough #2

[Dragon Scale Greaves]

[A Rank]

[Fire Resistance Lv3 Fire Absorption Lv3]

[Strength +5/ Agility increased by 10/ Feet damage increased by 5%]

[Greaves made of the leather and scales of a red dragon. Made from the leather of a red dragon that deals with fire, it not only boasts a strong fire resistance but can also absorb fire. The more fire you absorb, the more damage your feet will do.]

[Special Skill: Fire Strengthening]

[Every time the level of Fire Strengthening increases by one, your feet damage will rise by 5%. (Maximum level five - in the absence of no additional fire absorption, this level can be maintained for five minutes. After five minutes, the level is reduced back to level 0.)]

In-gong checked the greaves as he sat in the carriage headed to Thunderdoom Fortress.

After slowly reading the long sentences that popped up in the air, In-gong gave a delighted smile and attached the greaves to his shins.

“This is good.”

It was really good. The strength stat was a little weak for an A rank, but the increase in agility was beautiful. 10% was excellent. It meant that the ratio would keep increasing the more levels In-gong gained.

This alone was enough to make In-gong satisfied, but the greaves also had a special skill built into it.

‘Red dragon leather.’

Fortunately, the greaves weren’t red. Was it closer to a blackish red colour? The red dragons in Knight Saga were strange because most of them had a leather colour that was close to the primary colour, so In-gong was quite fortunate.

‘The fire can be recharged with Fire Arrow.’

It would be considerably hard work, but training would increase the level of Fire Arrow.

In-gong rubbed the greaves and imagined himself dealing a burning kick. Green Wind whispered to In-gong.

‘Master, I am much better than the greaves.’

As it could cause problems, In-gong had already explained earlier to Felicia about the greaves as a green light emerged from White Eagle.

In-gong continued staring at the greaves and said,

"You aren’t White Eagle."

‘It can be said that I am already one with White Eagle. White Eagle is excellent, so I am excellent.’

In-gong thought it was a strange logic. The translucent Green Wind sat on White Eagle and looked at him with discontent.

In-gong sighed without realising it.

"At first, I thought it was pretty cool, like something sacred."

‘Master?’

"No, you are the best."

In-gong touched White Eagle with the same hand he used to touch the greaves.



'Uhh, I feel bad again. Continue.'

Green Wind closed her eyes as he kept stroking her head.

Felicia, who was watching In-gong converse, gawked at White Eagle.

"Are you talking to Green Wind?"

"Yes, she is a little jealous."

'It isn't jealousy. I just told the truth.'

In-gong gently stroked her head a little bit more and Green Wind fell silent. As her mood subsided, the green light coming from White Eagle became more subdued.

Felicia asked,

"Can we see her like you do?"

"It might be possible."

Green Wind's power was recovering quite fast after staying in White Eagle. Maybe it would soon be safe to materialize.

"How about Karma?"

Karma, who was sitting in a corner of the wagon, replied to In-gong in a distracted voice.

"I feel like I don't want to see her."

She wanted to see Green Wind, who was the guardian of Enger Plains, but felt like all her worshipful feelings would fly away.

"I understand."

Carack clicked his tongue and lay a hand on Karma's shoulder.

Felicia laughed and asked In-gong another question,

"Is that the new armour?"

"I like it. Moving in it doesn't feel uncomfortable."

It wasn't the Dragon Scale Greaves, but it was a pretty good piece of leather armour he had bought from the Demon King's Palace.

It was Rank B. The leather armour itself wasn't light, but the weight reduction magic made him feel like he was wearing clothes. He also liked the magic that increased his stamina by 10%.

'There is a variety of resistance properties.'

By default, there was resistance to fire, ice and lightning. It wasn't as much as the Dragon Scale Greaves but it would reduce the damage of magic by quite a bit.

Felicia suddenly looked In-gong up and down.

"Aren't you really well armed?"

The enchanted leather armour that he took from the armoury of the Demon King's Palace.

The greaves made from the leather and scales of a red dragon.

The magic shield White Eagle that contained Green Wind.

Earth Quaker that had already proven its power several times.

The Tears of a Dark Elf that boasted absolute defense against mind magic...

"Yes. Don't I just need a helmet now?"

In-gong responded playfully but his thoughts were completely different.

'Not yet.'

In-gong and Green Wind were the only ones aware that Earth Quaker and White Eagle both belonged to elder dragons.

In-gong was thinking of collecting all four remaining equipment of the elder dragons in the future and he wasn't satisfied with only one accessory.

'I'll have to wear everything I can, including bracelets and earrings.'

He didn't have any slot limits like in a game.

'That would suck.'

A king should be properly fitted with items.

He also planned to increase Carack and Karma's combat power with items.

In-gong's eyes burned with ambition.

On the other hand, Felicia knew of the materials that formed the Dragon Scale Greaves and she was looking at them.

She might be congratulating him or feeling jealous, but Felicia had a strong will as a 'dark elf'. In-gong didn't receive any support from his mother's side, so she was glad that he was being helped by the sura's side.

Moreover, it was a secret from Daphne and Delia as he had only told Felicia.

Felicia tapped her fan against her cheeks before bringing up a new topic.

"I will go over something before we arrive."

Naturally, everyone's gaze moved toward Felicia. She stared at In-gong and explained,

"Shutra, you should know that there are two main ways of attacking dungeons. It is to push in with high numbers or breakthrough with a few elites."

The first method was truly ignorant and cruel. As arrows were fired on the battlefield, they would literally push their troops into the body of the trap.

It was impossible for Felicia, who cared about her people, to use this method.

"It is obvious but we will breakthrough with a small number. The members will be limited to the people in this carriage."

Felicia pointed to Delia who was sitting next to her.

"Delia will take the role of the guide. She had treasure hunter occupation, so she is good at discovering and disassembling traps."

In a RPG, it would be the role of a thief.

After using Delia as an example, Felicia pointed to everyone in the carriage.

"Daphne will take the role of recovery and raise the abilities of the group, while I will take the role of support in the back. Shutra and Carack will protect us."

"Understood."

"Leave it to me."

"And..."

Felicia glanced over at Karma. Karma was waiting for Felicia's words with a look of anticipation.

Felicia thought about Karma's role for a bit before declaring.

"I'll ask you to protect Daphne. Stay by her side."

"I understand. I'll work hard."

Felicia finished distributing the roles and looked at In-gong again.

"The Thunderdoom Fortress hasn't been properly revealed yet. General Kushbak died in the tunnel connecting the mine to the fortress, so any excavation work has been suspended."

In other words, it meant there was almost no progress in the excavation.

"There isn't a time limit, so we don't have to hurry. This is essential for the strategy."

Felicia glanced at Delia who pulled out a long bag from under her seat. She opened the lid and revealed several small oxygen masks made of black leather.

"What is this? Is it for that reason?"

Carack blinked with surprise and Felicia laughed as she took out a mask. It completely covered her nose and mouth like an emergency oxygen mask.

"It is a tool to block the toxic gases inside the mine. It has a detoxifying effect, so gases won't be a problem if you wear it."

Felicia pointed to the box and Carack carefully raised a mask to his face. Despite Carack's face being completely larger than Felicia's, it was possible to cover his nose and mouth with the mask.

Delia smiled at Carack before looking at In-gong.

"The official cause of death for Kashubal is being trapped and poisoned with toxic gases, but there are likely to be other things inside the fortress. I've made a list of things that we are likely to encounter near the fortress."

Delia's report had pictures and explanations for each creature.

In-gong already knew the names and weakness of the creatures that appeared in Thunderdoom, but the report was a type of confirmation.

'It is similar.'

In-gong further explained the general weakness and strategies to be used against the monsters appearing in Thunderdoom Fortress. He could use the excuse of reading it in a book but no one questioned him.

Some time passed...

And the carriage stopped moving.

The mine that was connected to Thunderdoom was virtually abandoned due to the toxic gases coming from underground.

General Kashubal had died here, so it was difficult for anyone to approach.

'Why did that happen?'

Were the toxic gases more serious than he had thought?

In-gong was the representative of this mission but he didn't have to deal with everything. Felicia handled the remaining forces of the 27th expedition still stationed here, while Delia invested General Kashubal once again.

In-gong left it to the experts and retired to his accommodation to rest.

And the next morning.

Felicia finished explaining to the local caretakers and the 27th expedition about the general excavation plan and explained that dark elves were scheduled to visit later. Then she headed to In-gong who was waiting to enter the mine.

"Let's go."

Unlike her normal exposed clothes, Felicia wore leather clothes similar to Shutra and the mask. There were many pockets in her clothes so they seemed to be dungeon exploration clothes.

The party entered the mine, with Delia in the lead holding a light. It was a straight path so there was no need for a local guide.

The fact that the toxic gases were thick and reached their waists made him think that it was a result of many experiments.

Thanks to the masks prepared by Felicia, they could breathe easily.

But Felicia was still alert. Instead of going deeper, she made Delia move forward and experimented with the stability of the masks near the entrance.

After walking down a gentle slope for approximately 50 metres, a huge hole was revealed. It was the entrance connected to Thunderdoom Fortress.

Delia looked at In-gong and Felicia once before entering the hole. At first, it seemed to be a cramped cave but then a large space appeared.

"I think it is over there."

In the midst of the dense fog made of poisonous gases, Felicia pointed to a hole that was far away.

In-gong checked the mini-map and nodded. Thunderdoom Fortress were definitely beyond that hole.

The destination was right in front of them so the footsteps of the party quickened. And just as they were half-way across the space.

Carack abruptly stopped moving. Delia, who was leading, grabbed her chest like it was painful while Karma and Daphne leaned forward and gasped for breath.

Felicia was the fastest to respond to this simultaneous collapse. She opened her arms and cast a spell.

"The wind!"

The wind around Felicia pushed away the heavy toxic gases. However, it was useless. The gas returned before Felicia could cast another spell and she sat down with a moan.

Then the toxic gases suddenly changed. No, a new toxic gas was added to the existing ones.

Delia couldn't endure it any longer and fell down. Karma grabbed Daphne and sat down while Carack fell to his knees.

The toxic gas filling the area changed from grey to dark yellow. And while the toxic gases were changing, bodies emerged.

Their arms were long and their hands were in a bent posture. Yellow eyes shone in the

darkness as their bodies were all black.

There were six of them. One of them watched the party collapsed on the ground and raised his hand. The other five started to move at the same time. Their hands were all holding bone daggers.

And the moment that the first man reached Delia.

Kwang!

A white aura exploded among the yellow poisonous gas. The white aura had a green trail as it moved.

Kakakang!

Two of them fell to the ground with a sharp noise. White Eagle struck their heads in succession while In-gong moved.

By the time White Eagle had a new goal, In-gong had already reached the fourth person. Rather than letting the man open his mouth to scream, In-gong delivered a sharp uppercut.

The man crashed into the ground. There were two remaining. White Eagle took care of one of them. In-gong moved towards the man who raised his hand in the beginning. It was an explosive movement caused by Divine Beast Authority.

“H-how?”

The one person left was astonished. Five of his men had collapsed in a matter of seconds.

Even the intermediate general of the Demon King’s Palace lost his combat strength and died from this. Yet there was someone who moved freely through the poison!

"It is because I am the protagonist."

[Protagonist Body Lv2]

[Additional effects: Hundred Poisons Resistance Lv1.]



[Poison resistance is greatly increased.]

In-gong's fist struck his face.

# Chapter 65

## Breakthrough #3

Generally, being marked with hundreds or thousands had the connotation of ‘many.’

It wasn’t a skill that blocked a hundred types of poisons like the name implied. It was a skill that allowed the person to survive by increasing resistance to poisons.

In-gong took down the final man.

It was impossible for him to completely invalidate the poison using Hundred Poisons Resistance. His fingers were shaking and his breathing was becoming difficult.

"Cure Poison."

In-gong used the magic on himself. It was a recovery spell he had acquired when he used an absurd excuse on Felicia.

Unlike Fire Arrow and Heal, he didn’t have much opportunity to use Cure Poison, so it was only level one. However, it worked quite well. Maybe it was due to his high magic control.

In-gong’s breathing calmed down. He was curious about the identities of those who had attacked, but it was more important to secure the safety of the party.

“Green Wind.”

Once In-gong called, White Eagle flew through the air and landed on his left arm. It was at that moment.

“Kiaack!”

The man in front of In-gong rolled over and opened his mouth. An ugly sound emerged from him.

‘Master?’

The ground convulsed. No, it was the ceiling. In-gong realized that the roof was starting to fall.

Magic? Explosion? A sign to other enemies hiding? Or was it just a coincidence?

It didn’t matter the reason. In-gong turned his head and saw that the entrance was starting to fall. He reached out to Felicia and Delia who were lying on the ground.

“Green Wind!”

The meaning of his words was obvious. White Eagle flew away from In-gong’s left arm and spread out the white metal wings to increase the defense range. In that state, it flew towards Carack, Karma and Daphne and stayed above their heads.

Then In-gong ran. He held Felicia and Delia in one hand each and ran toward the hole leading to Thunderdoom Fortress. He threw the two people as hard as he could when he reached the end.

Felicia and Delia rolled like broken marionettes and disappeared into the hole. The height of the hole wasn’t too high, so In-gong turned around straight away. Stones had already started to drop all over the place.

‘Master!’

Green Wind shouted. A huge rock was shaking on top of White Eagle. If it fell off White Eagle, it would crush everyone at once.

‘Dragon Blood!’

In-gong activated the power hurriedly. As the distance compressed, the force at which he pushed off almost crushed the floor.

Concentration.

The change in the flow of time was relative. In-gong saw another falling rock and made another leap. He urgently gathered aura on his fist and made it explode!

Kwang!

The rock on top of White Eagle shattered completely. However, it wasn't over. The rock broke into pieces and scattered randomly due to the explosion. Some of them fell toward Carack's and Karma's head, but White Eagle moved and blocked them properly.

As soon as he landed on the ground, In-gong reached out again. The entrance was already blocked by rocks. The shaking of the ceiling was increasing.

In-gong grabbed Karma and Daphne. He left Carack behind as he sped toward the hole.

'Master!'

Green Wind called out to In-gong. There wasn't time for another return trip.

In-gong didn't stop. Rather than going back to save Carack, he threw Karma and Daphne into the hole and shouted while raising his left arm.

"Green Wind!"

It was a command to return. Green Wind was shocked as she flew above Carack but couldn't resist. She shot across the rocks and returned to In-gong.

'Master!'

In-gong ignored her call that was filled with disappointment and anger and turned toward the hole. Then he cried out once again,

"Carack!"

The King's Knights- Call!

Carack jumped across the space. He appeared in the air in front of In-gong and fell to the ground. The height of the hole was higher than he thought, but the shock wasn't great because he had Carack as a cushion.

In-gong rolled again and raised his body. Then there was a huge roar like it had been waiting.

Kwakakakakakang!

He knew just by the sound. It wasn't a simple collapse. It was intense enough to completely collapse the connection between the mine and Thunderdoom Fortress.

In-gong breathed out roughly. The hole he just passed through was completely blocked. If he had been even a few seconds late, both In-gong and Carack would have lost their lives.

'Master, are you okay?'

'I'm sorry. I thought badly of you.'

In-gong nodded a few times before raising his left arm to White Eagle. He avoided the collapse but the poison still remained. He had to hurry and use first aid.

In-gong gathered the lighting devices of his party members to make the surroundings brighter. Carack was the heaviest and the most difficult one to move.

'I have to treat Felicia first.'

Felicia knew detoxification magic, so it was the most reasonable choice. In-gong used Cure Poison and removed Felicia's mask. The air inside the fortress was murky but there were no problems with toxic gases.

"Once again, Cure Poison."

The level of Cure Poison was low, so he had to use it more than once. In-gong used Cure Potion three times before pulling out potions from his inventory. They were all received as rewards for his merit level.

In-gong opened Felicia's mouth and poured a stamina recovery potion inside. He didn't wait for an effect and opened an awakening potion.

As the name suggested, it was a potion that restored the consciousness. It was best to wake up naturally, but he had no time to wait. In-gong apologized to Felicia before pouring the awakening potion in.

“Keook!”

Felicia’s eyes flashed open as she sat forward. It was so painful that she frowned and tried to hold back the nausea.

In-gong patted Felicia’s back and asked,

“Noona, are you okay? Do you feel strange?”

“Sh-utra?”

Felicia gazed at In-gong with half-hooded eyes. Due to the stimulus effect of the awakening potion, her mind wasn’t completely back.

However, In-gong couldn’t afford to let Felicia recover naturally. He quickly told Felicia who was still catching her breath.

“Everybody is poisoned. We have to hurry and treat them.”

Felicia looked at the people next to her and understood the situation. She stretched out and laughed.

"You are relentless."

“Sorry.”

Felicia cast a magic spell on Carack who was closest, while In-gong headed toward Karma who was lying at the very end.

It was really a struggle. After using the detoxification magic and making their drink potions, In-gong confirmed that everyone was okay and collapsed on the ground where Felicia was already sitting.

Felicia lay down and watched Carack.

“Carack has a lot of injuries. There isn’t anything serious but... his abdomen isn’t good.”

In-gong looked at Carack. His body was scratched from the rocks and there was something on his abdomen that looked like a footprint.

In-gong was reminded of the moment he landed on top of Carack and nodded.

“Yes.”

‘Master?’

Green Wind asked with censure in her voice but In-gong once again didn’t reply.

Felicia raised her upper body forcefully and asked In-gong,

"What happened?"

She had no memories after falling due to the toxic gas. In-gong explained as briefly as possible.

Six monsters appeared after the group collapsed.

A massive cave-in had occurred when one of them screamed.

Felicia touched her forehead like it was sore.

In-gong lied that the reason for his resistance to the toxic gas was White Repair, but she ignored it because now wasn’t the time to consider it.

There was something else more important to Felicia.

“They are all dead?”

"Unfortunately."

In-gong hadn’t killed them because there was no time and he also wanted to interrogate them.

Yet they had died due to the cave-in. He didn’t know if the scream had caused the collapse or if it was just a signal to cause the collapse, but they were dead.

The last man had thrown away his life to kill In-gong’s party.

“Those guys killed General Kashubal?”

"It is most likely.

An intermediate general of the Demon King's Palace wasn't invincible. He was resistant to poison thanks to the strong body of a draconian but that only lasted to a certain extent.

'Moreover... It might not have been the same as us.'

Frankly speaking, the black unidentified people that appeared had been too weak. It was possible that other people had appeared to take care of General Kashubal.

This time, In-gong was the one who asked a question.

"Do you have any guesses on who they are?"

"There is no basis, so I can't guess."

The identities of those people. Why did they attack people from the Demon King's Palace twice?

In-gong was reminded of Balkarova who he encountered on Enger Plains. Just like the six men, Balkarova was a monster that didn't appear in Knight Saga.

What was going on? Was there a third power that hadn't appeared in Knight Saga?

If they did exist, what benefits would they get from this? Interfering with attempts to excavate Thunderdoom Fortress? Or some other purpose?

Felicia sighed for a long time. She spoke to In-gong while her eyes remained closed.

“Shutra, you are in charge of this mission. I will follow your decision. We now have three paths.”

The road back was blocked and the group was now in the fortress. In-gong also came up with three ways.

"First of all, we just wait here."



That wasn't good. The outside didn't know about the circumstances of In-gong's party. Right now, there was a possibility of giving up due to the cave-in. Even if they pierced through, it would require some time.

"Secondly, go to the entrance of Thunderdoom Fortress."

This was also dismissed.

The entrance to Thunderdoom Fortress had collapsed completely. Machines were required to get rid of the huge stacks of rocks in front of the entrance.

In Knight Saga, they had started digging at the entrance and entered Thunderdoom Fortress using it. However, In-gong's party entered through this passage connected to the mine, so of course the entrance remained tightly sealed.

"Thirdly, pierce into the very center of Thunderdoom Fortress and gain control of it."

It was a dwarf fortress, so it was likely that a transfer formation existed. It was like the portal they had found in the dwarf cave in the Jishuka Mountains as well as the dungeon where the Thunder Light Anvil had been, which Felicia had discovered after the battle with the Red Lightning tribe was over.

'Yes, definitely.'

Moreover, there would be more than one way to get out if they reached the center.

Although the method and timing was different, Thunderdoom Fortress was still Thunderdoom Fortress. In-gong said with a lively smile,

"As always, isn't the third option the best?"

"Perhaps."

There would be third parties, dungeon guardians and various traps inside the fortress, but even so, they couldn't just sit here and wait for help to come.

"Then let's prepare to move."

If a crowd of people came to investigate the noise, they would most likely run to this place.

In-gong stood up and reached out to Felicia, who laughed and grabbed In-gong's hand.

It was different from planned, but it was time to break into Thunderdoom Fortress.

"My stomach hurts."

# Chapter 66

## Breakthrough #4

Many things were necessary to break into a dungeon.

There needed to be a sufficient amount of food, water, weapons, trap detection and the combat power to defeat the dungeon guardians and monsters.

Additionally, there was one thing that was easy to overlook, even though it was very important.

Securing the right lighting.

The dungeons were dark. Most dungeons were underground and of course, they didn't even have windows for sunlight to come through. Many dungeons had lighting devices or torches installed, but there were large gaps between the installed devices.

Thunderdoom Fortress was dark. It had been hundreds of years since the dwarves lived in the fortress, so having magic lights pour from the ceiling... that was already in the past.

As a specialist in ruins exploration, Felicia had prepared quite a few lighting fixtures. There were shining rods that could be called small flashlights while Delia at the front and Carack at the end were given glowing fist-sized stones. It emitted a very strong light that was able to stretch out 10 meters in every direction.

Currently, the only thing missing for the party was a sufficient amount of food and water. They hadn't brought a lot of food because they were going to come back after getting a glimpse of the fortress.

"My stomach hurts."

Carack caressed his belly as he sat down. In-gong was paying attention to Green Wind and replied vaguely,

“Aren’t you just hungry?”

"Uhh, I am also hungry."

It had been three hours since they broke into Thunderdoom Fortress. They had been walking around for two hours despite being exhausted by the awakening potion.

Thunderdoom Fortress was big. It was a fortified city, not a mere fortress like the place where the Thunder Light Anvil was hidden, so the scale was really great.

‘But it is a range that can be explored in a day.’

Thunderdoom Fortress was a place built by digging into the mountains. There were various traps, monsters and dungeon guardians, but they should be able to explore from beginning to end in a few hours.

For the past two hours, In-gong’s party had encountered two trap rooms and two groups of dungeon monsters. If there was one attribute about it being a fortified city, it was the fact that the traps were less meaningful.

After all, this was a place where people lived. The more traps that were laid, the harder it was to live.

‘Fortunately, we haven’t met anyone else.’

He wondered about the questionable people in the fortress.

In-gong checked the minimized mini-map once again. In-gong’s group was currently located at the back of the Thunderdoom Fortress.

He hadn’t memorized all the dungeon maps that appeared in Knight Saga.

However, if he remembered the important points, the story would be different.

‘If I go straight, there will be a turning point.’

Indeed, there were two paths leading to the control room of Thunderdoom Fortress. One way was short but was a literal trap field, while the other path took a long time because it passed through the settlements but had few traps.

"Your Highness, do you really not need to draw a map?"

Daphne asked carefully from a corner where she was drinking a mana potion. She had no experience in dungeon exploration, but she was well aware of the importance of cartography when exploring a dungeon.

However, nobody was making a map despite the fact that they were exploring a strange dungeon. She was forced to feel uneasy.

However, unlike Daphne, everyone else had relaxed expressions. In-gong nodded and said,

"Yes, don't worry because everything is in my head."

She became more uneasy after hearing him speak so confidently.

Felicia said with a smile,

"It might seem ridiculous, but it is the truth. I don't know about other things, but you can trust him regarding maps."

"You don't know about other things?"

Felicia shrugged and giggled at In-gong's incredulous question.

"Anyway, it is a waste. I wanted to investigate properly."

Right now, the party was just advancing unconditionally. They walked passed the everyday products of dwarf life as well as the art and architectural style. Felicia was interested in ruins, so it was very regrettable for her.

"Well, you can come back later."

"Even so. I didn't think that it would be like this."

She had expected some difficulties, but she had never imagined that they would be attacked and trapped inside the fortress.

Carack nodded.

"Well, that's right. Things turned out like this. Prince always ends up getting caught up in something unexpected."

"Yes."

It really seemed like it.

The swamp mammoths had shown up unexpectedly with the Red Lightning tribe while monsters with purple aura had appeared in the casios subjugation. It was also true for their reconnaissance of the northern part of the Enger Plains. They had been surrounded by monsters unexpectedly and had been almost killed.

It wasn't just the missions that were unexpected. Both of his court gatherings weren't common.

In-gong recalled everything that had happened in the past. The translucent Green Wind appeared above White Eagle and asked,

'Master, is it really like that?'

In-gong laughed bitterly instead of answering. Even though it was true, he didn't like it being brought up like this.

'Are these things due to Protagonist Correction?'

In-gong unwittingly opened the skill window to check.

"But... we were able to handle the unexpected events thanks to Your Highness. I would already be dead if it wasn't for Your Highness."

In-gong wasn't just the cause. They were able to resolve the unexpected situations thanks to In-gong.

Delia said so with a smile and Felicia nodded in agreement, with Daphne and Karma following suit.

In-gong looked at Delia with a touched expression before turning his gaze towards

Carack and Green Wind.

"My stomach hurts."

'I am always on Master's side.'

In-gong couldn't help laughing at the both of them. It was at that moment...

The darkness vanished in an instant. Bright light poured from the ceiling, not only the room where In-gong's party was but all over the fortress. This was followed by sharp sirens.

Carack, Daphne and Kama sprang up at the sudden change. In-gong, Felicia and Delia were also astonished but the three people thought of something else.

Lights turned on and emergency sirens started ringing. It was a situation that would happen in a fortress or a city, not a small dungeon. Additionally, this situation didn't happen very often.

It occurred when the most important facility in the ruin was attacked or when a guardian, with a rank that could affect the entire ruin, was attacked.

In-gong and Felicia looked at each other. It was obvious that they both had the same thoughts.

Someone was attacking the dungeon.

They had just arrived at the most important facility or had started a battle with the highest ranked dungeon guardian.

It must be the people who attacked In-gong's party.

'The purpose of those guys was to capture Thunderdoom Fortress?'

Did they ambush General Kashubal and In-gong's party so that their fortress attack wouldn't be hindered?

It was plausible, although he wasn't certain.

General Kashubal had died a fortnight ago. If so, they had at least a fortnight to attack Thunderdoom Fortress.

Then why did they wait until now?

It wouldn't have taken so long unless they were looking in every room and exploring the fortress like Felicia wanted to do.

There was something more. It was clear there was something that In-gong didn't know about.

'And that is their purpose.'

What if their goal wasn't to capture the fortress but to find something? Perhaps they were after the dragon slayer series of weapons, like In-gong?

'Ascalon.'

It was the most powerful dragon slayer weapon sleeping in Thunderdoom Fortress. In-gong absolutely had to get his hands on it in this mission.

In-gong finished organizing his thoughts. He couldn't sit still while those people were acting.

"Shutra."

Felicia looked at In-gong. Once again, it was clear that she was thinking the same thing as In-gong.

"Breaking through with force."

Felicia nodded at In-gong's words. Delia was also prepared to fight as she put away all the lighting devices.

In-gong glanced around the party and quickly commanded,

"Carack, raise your shield and lead the way. Just keep running forward. Karma will bring Daphne. Felicia noona and Delia will defend the sides."



Until now, they had dismantled the traps one by one, but it would be different now.

Breaking through the traps. They had to do this despite the risks to their bodies.

Carack couldn't help but laugh as he grasped his shield tightly with both hands. Delia and Felicia stood right behind Carack, followed by Karma who was holding Daphne.

"Green Wind."

In-gong raised his left arm and White Eagle flew to it. It would fly around the party and bridge all the gaps in their defense.

"I will try it."

Felicia grinned and called her wind spirit. She gave up on all her other magic and only focused on the wind spirit. The wind spirit became a powerful gust of air as it responded to Felicia.

Carack's side was defending the front. Felicia's wind was defending the sides. White Eagle flew above their heads and filled in for any gaps.

Daphne added various support magic, while In-gong was armed with the dwarf dagger in order to trigger Below the King's Flag.

"This is the first time I am targeting a dungeon in this way."

It was an ignorant and reckless manner, but Felicia couldn't help smiling at the new challenge.

"Go."

In-gong cried out and Carack breathed in deeply. He released a long breath and moved.

"Run!"

"Kuraha!"

Carack rushed forward. Like a train, the party followed suit. In-gong kept an eye on the mini-map and directed Carack.

Kakakang!

Not long after, arrows poured in from the front. Carack didn't stop moving and the arrows rained down on his shield.

"Karaa!"

There were also arrows from the side, but the wind spirit didn't allow this. Almost all the arrows were swept away by the wind while the ones still headed towards the party were blocked by White Eagle.

Carack went down the short path with a lot of traps. At that moment, flames poured down from the ceiling.

"Don't stop!"

In-gong shouted as a green light came from White Eagle...

The shield that guarded the heads of the party. The range that wasn't covered by White Eagle was once again protected by the wind spirit. The strong winds twisted the course of the flames and even redirected the path of acids pouring down.

Carack ran as hard as he could. He was slightly out of breath but In-gong had no thoughts about stopping him.

"Full Charge!"

Daphne cast a strong stamina regeneration spell from Karma's back. Rather than restoring wounds, it was a stamina recovery magic that stabilized Carack's breathing and gave new power to his legs.

"Hoeeeh!"

Carack moaned as he looked in front of his shield. This time, flames were pouring from the front.

Carack cursed and gave a battle cry at the same time. He tackled the wave of flames head on and opened the path.

“Oatatata!”

"Full Charge!"

Arrows, fire, javelins and so on poured towards the party. Daphne used the spell Full Charge whenever they were exhausted.

They couldn't become tired while rushing through the traps.

Not just Carack, but everyone in the party had the same determination. However, in the midst of this, In-gong thought of something else.

'The traps are still active!'

This meant the 3rd party didn't take this path.

“Run! Carack! Run!”

“Ohhh!”

"Full Charge!"

Daphne used her fifth Full Charge. The magic shield from the Demon King's Palace was a mess. Daphne was becoming exhausted despite being on Karma's back and Felicia was strained as she kept operating the wind spirit. Regardless, the party was able to maintain the momentum of a runaway train. They weren't far from their goal.

The advantage of the traps was that there weren't many dungeon monsters. The monsters that they did see didn't think about rushing into the traps to fight them.

In fact, this was the nice thing about rushing recklessly. However, it would be the end if there was a trap on the ground. Fortunately, In-gong knew that there were no ground traps on this path and Felicia also disregarded it. It was because ground traps weren't common for dwarves.

Some time passed.

As Daphne used her final Full Charge and fainted from the lack of magic power, the

party reached a big door.

"Kuha, heo... ker."

Carack gave a bizarre moan and removed his shield. Thanks to Full Charge, his breathing was stable, but his heart felt like it was going to burst due to the psychological problems.

Karma was barely able to stand on her two legs while Felicia's arms were trembling. Delia looked back at In-gong.

"Your Highness."

"Yes, it is probably here."

He was sure of it. He had seen the entrance to the control room a few times in Knight Saga.

'Did the dungeon guardian go to support the battle?'

There was supposed to be a gargoyle protecting the entrance to the control room. In-gong gritted his teeth. He guessed where the gargoyle had gone.

'Indeed, Ascalon.'

In Thunderdoom Fortress, Ascalon was embedded in the chest of the black dragon Partizan.

Partizan's body was located in the central plaza. The highest ranked guardian was also there.

'Master, it is too hard.'

In-gong gently touched White Eagle on his left arm in order to soothe the whining Green Wind and opened the door to the control room.

He felt dizzy in the very large room. The last day of Thunderdoom Fortress had been very confusing, so everything was a mess.

In the center of the room was a large sphere on a desk along with a dwarf helmet on top of some bones. It was Sarabal, the last captain of Thunderdoom Fortress.

Sarabal was seriously injured in the battle with the dragons, so he remained in the control room while the other dwarves escaped. It was clear that he had controlled Thunderdoom Fortress until his very last breath.

After a short moment of silence, Felicia withdrew the control key from Sarabal's hand. It was the first time she had been to Thunderdoom Fortress, but she had explored dwarf ruins several times and knew what to do.

The small metal rod shaped controlled was inserted into a hole beneath the large sphere and she inserted magic power. A large blue light emerged from the sphere and spread out in front of the party.

"There is a fight."

The window of light showed the dungeon guardians of Thunderdoom Fortress confronting the people that he saw in the tunnel. Beyond that was the body of a giant black dragon.

The number of people fighting was roughly 100.

Felicia gazed at In-gong and he nodded.

It was a chance they could take advantage of.

# Chapter 67

## Breakthrough #5

Thunderdoom Fortress hadn't been the last fortress of the Dwarf Kingdom. Thus, the record of how Thunderdoom Fortress was destroyed and by whom was passed on to later generations.

Black Dragon Partizan.

He had been huge, greedy and wicked and had been the most active dragon in the war against the Dwarf Kingdom.

His strategy had been simple.

Knock against the fortress until it collapsed.

Partizan had gathered an enormous number of monsters and attacked Thunderdoom Fortress. According to the records of the Dwarf Kingdom, the number was close to 100,000- although there were a few who doubted the authenticity of this due to the distinctive dwarf bravado. Actually, it was commonly accepted among scholars that the number was closer to 20,000-30,000.

The Dwarf Kingdom's strongest Fortress, Thunderdoom Fortress, blocked the first attack well.

However, there was a problem from then on.

The black dragon, Partizan, was a powerful warrior and magician. He was an outstanding necromancer and revived all the dead monsters for a second attempt.

To his surprise, Thunderdoom Fortress managed to endure this second attack as well. The undead swarming Thunderdoom Fortress were destroyed and couldn't be resurrected again.

The dwarves had achieved two great victories but couldn't rejoice. This was because

Partizan's third attack began, like everything before it had just been nonsense.

Partizan and his previous attacks had been enough to weaken Thunderdoom Fortress.

The outer wall of Thunderdoom Fortress collapsed. Partizan and his monsters penetrated the fortress where the dwarves had been ready for him. All the dwarves of Thunderdoom Fortress, both young and old, had been gathered in the central plaza with their weapons.

From the vanguard, Partizan, a dragon of the greatest species, slaughtered many dwarves like they were insects.

Then Partizan was killed. Maybe it was because his eyes were covered by excessive pride.

He'd had a showdown with Tiny Spark, one of the most powerful warriors in Thunderdoom Fortress and the strongest weapon pierced Partizan's chest.

The dragon spear, Ascalon.

Among the Dwarf Kingdom's series of dragon slayer weapons, it was the name of the one that led to Partizan's death. Although the brave Tiny Spark was shattered by the magic Partizan used before his death, he had just burst into joyous laughter instead of pained screams.

Partizan died and his troops started an insane rampage after losing their master.

The dwarves were forced to abandon Thunderdoom Fortress. The small number of survivors left for other cities through the dwarf portal and Thunderdoom Fortress became a huge graveyard with the corpses of numerous dwarves and Partizan buried there.

"So, in the end, the spear piercing Partizan's chest is called Ascalon?"

"Perhaps."

In-gong nodded slowly as he gazed at Partizan's body on the screen. According to his estimates, the body was roughly 30 meters long. Although it wasn't equivalent for an elder dragon that was several hundred metres long, he could be called a true 'monster.'

There was something white and long stuck in the chest of the dead body. It was clearly the dragon spear, Ascalon, a masterpiece of the dragon slayer series.

Felicia narrowed her eyes and said,

"If they are fighting like that, their purpose might be Ascalon."

He wasn't sure. From the outset, there were many uncertain points about this attack. Just like In-gong, Felicia was unable to fight an answer as to why this attack had begun.

However, it was a possibility. Felicia spoke decisively.

"We obviously can't give Ascalon to unidentified people. Not only did they kill general and soldiers of the Demon King's Palace, they also aimed for our lives. We can't let them achieve their purpose."

Their number exceeded 100 people but In-gong didn't care. From the beginning, it hadn't been necessary to engage in an all-out war with them.

In-gong gazed at the dungeon guardians on the screen and asked,

"Noona, can you get control of the dungeon guardians?"

He couldn't try it in Knight Saga but reality was different.

However, Felicia shook her head.

"It is hard. This situation is different from the Thunder Light Anvil. Currently, the highest ranked dungeon guardian... is the big dwarf golem over there. It seems like all the people who have authority over it are dead."

Everyone's gazes headed toward the huge golem that was in the center of the screen. It was six times the height of an ordinary dwarf and was made of a silver metal. It was leading the fight with a hammer in one hand and a shield in the other.

As Felicia said, if all those with the authority over it had died, then she wouldn't be able to control the guardian even if she used the control room.



Daphne had already fainted, so there was no reaction from her, but Karma's expression darkened.

Felicia smiled at Karma before looking back at In-gong.

"There is an idea we can consider. It would be good to jump in at the appropriate moment."

The best case was if the dungeon guardians and the third party were destroyed at the end of the battle. It was the best scenario if they could get rid of the survivors and acquire the remains of Thunderdoom Fortress, including Ascalon.

The dungeon guardians wouldn't stop fighting until the people were destroyed.

However, it seemed like those people were likely to win when looking at the immediately situation.

"Shutra, what do you think?"

At Felicia's question, In-gong looked back at the highest ranked guardian on the screen. It was the last boss of Thunderdoom Fortress in Knight Saga, but this time, he didn't have to fight it.

"I'll get some insurance first."

"Insurance?"

"Insurance."

In-gong lifted his left arm that was equipped with White Eagle.

The battle between the guardians and the third party was really intense.

The dungeon guardians were intense and fearless despite the past, in which the dragons had left them with one tenth of their original number.

The highest ranked guardian wielded a hammer that shot out thunderbolts while the

gargoyle guardians fired a powerful energy mass.

The third party wasn't just standing there helplessly. Unlike the ones who had attacked In-gong, these people had real power. There were some big ogre-like people and some who used magic.

The surprising thing was that they had some dungeon monsters native to Thunderdoom Fortress under their control. Those people obviously had certain artifacts that could control powerful monsters.

It was a splendid and spectacular fight. The battlefield had been ruined by hundreds of years of fighting and the remains of the dwarves added a solemn and desolate air to it.

However, In-gong's party focused on something other than the fight.

In-gong was currently hiding in a corner of the central plaza. Delia remained in the control room with Daphne while Felicia, Carack and Karma had come with In-gong.

In-gong took deep breaths before looking at his companions. Felicia sighed like it couldn't be helped and knocked against In-gong's shoulder lightly.

"It is really reckless. This might be obvious but be careful."

"Don't worry."

In-gong replied with a laugh then looked at Karma when she spoke.

"I wish Your Highness luck."

"Come back safely."

Carack was as blunt as always, but that bluntness made In-gong feel comfortable this time.

"I'll be right back."

In-gong responded lightly before using Protection of the Wind. Right now, what he needed weren't explosive movements but agile and quiet ones.

In-gong looked at the mini-map and divided the battlefield in two.

One was the battleground where the dungeon guardians and the third party were together.

The other was where the dungeon guardians were behind the black dragon, Partizan.

In-gong's destination was the body of Partizan.

'I have to take Ascalon.'

The most important purpose of attacking Thunderdoom Fortress was to secure Ascalon.

If he could secure Arkaroola, he could take advantage of the flow of the battlefield.

If the dungeon guardians won, he wouldn't have to fight. If the third party won, he would wipe out the remnants. If the third party won by a narrow margin, he would fight. However, if that didn't happen, he could just withdraw. At the very least, he could make them seem like dogs chasing after chickens.

In-gong moved his body quickly. The sound of the highest ranked guardian's thunderbolts covered any sound In-gong made.

In-gong zigzagged and took cover as he advanced until he eventually reached Partizan's body. Involuntarily, he swallowed his saliva.

Not only was he enormous, the colour of Partizan's body was so vivid that it didn't seem like he died hundreds of years ago. He seemed like he was alive and moving.

Obviously, he couldn't be compared to an elder dragon who had the grandeur of a mountain. However, he discovered why the word 'dragon' could cause fear.

In-gong calmed his heart and climbed aboard Partizan's body. As he arrived at the chest area, he found the top of Ascalon.

Ascalon wasn't a simple spear. Rather, the end was closer to a ballista arrow or a giant lance.

In-gong grabbed the handle of Ascalon without thinking.

Simple muscle strength was needed. Instead of invoking Dragon Blood which could potentially stimulate Ascalon, In-gong gritted his teeth and concentrated his aura on both arms. He also invested some additional points into strength.

There was the sound of thunder. The screams of the third party shook the central plaza. Among all the noise, In-gong swallowed a groan. At least, the spear was lifted and Ascalon started to show its appearance.

A white spear. Despite being embedded in the body of a dragon for a long time, it had maintained its pristine beauty.

There were complex golden patterns carved on it. It was a spell to attack a dragon, the core of the dragon slayer series.

In-gong grabbed the spear length instead of the handle and pulled using the last of his strength. He liberated Ascalon from the body of Partizan.

Felicia and Karma exclaimed breathlessly while Carack looked at the battlefield with nervous eyes.

[Ascalon]

[A masterpiece of the Dragon Slayer series]

[A huge spear that destroyed the heart of the black dragon Partizan. It contains all the grudges and anger of the dwarves of Thunderdoom Fortress.]

Instead of looking at the options, In-gong hurriedly moved from Partizan's chest. It was because he sensed an abnormality when Ascalon was pulled out.

'Master!'

In-gong remained silent as Green Wind shouted loudly. Instead of answering, In-gong placed Ascalon in the inventory. He would worry about making excuses to Felicia later. The important thing was acquiring Ascalon safely.

Kwakakaka!

The sound wasn't due to the highest ranked guardian's thunder. It was coming from the black dragon, Partizan. Partizan's body, which had been preserved for hundreds of years, was finally liberated. The flesh faded and the bones weakened like it suddenly experienced hundreds of years. Partizan's body crumpled with a roar and the gaze of everyone on the battlefield turned toward In-gong.

The highest ranked dungeon guardian panicked. No, it fell into confusion. Partizan's body had collapsed and Ascalon disappeared. So, what should it do now?

The answer was fixed. The highest ranked dungeon guardian thought simply instead of making it too complicated. It started hammering at any intruders in front of it, but its target was more the third party who were nearby than In-gong.

The reaction of the third party was somewhat different.

Some of them shouted frantically while others pierced through the gaps in the defences, caused by the highest ranked guardian going crazy. Those who escaped the battlefield rushed toward In-gong.

In-gong decided quickly. He didn't know that Partizan's body would collapse in that way. If he had known, he would have planned something else.

Anyhow, the water had already been spilled and it wasn't a bad situation. Ascalon was secured and the dungeon guardians' priority were the third party. Moreover, some of the people were lured over, so he didn't need to head over to the main battlefield which involved the dungeon guardians and 3rd party.

"Greenie! Continue the operation!"

"That nickname is too much! My name is Green Wind!"

Green Wind protested but followed In-gong's orders faithfully. White Eagle spread out its metal plates like wings and flew near In-gong's feet. In-gong climbed aboard White Eagle and felt like he was riding a skateboard.

"Fly!"

'Heavy! Master!'

Green Wind whined again but she still followed the commands faithfully. White Eagle flew toward the ceiling while carrying In-gong.

The enemies arrived too late and threw arrows or weapons at him, but it was useless. White Eagle moved effortlessly when it encountered a barrier or avoided any attacks.

Felicia and Karma were bewildered by the unexpected sight while Carack shouted. It was a warning, not in admiration.

"Prince! Watch out! Those guys are doing something!"

In-gong looked back. Not all of the enemies were chasing In-gong.

A few of them were standing in the wreckage of Partizan. They stabbed the chests of the dead, causing blood to flow toward a large gem that they were standing around.

In-gong felt something ominous, but their behaviour was faster. Those guys stabbed themselves in the heart with the end of the gem. At that moment, a blue aura exploded and covered Partizan's entire body.

Kiaaaaaaaah!

The roar shook all of them. The highest rated guardian stopped fighting while the third party felt a mix of horror and joy.

Partizan's body stood up. The dragon was resurrected. He had lost all his supreme intelligence and magic powers, but he was still a mighty monster.

Zombie dragon.

The blue energy covering Partizan's body turned purple.

# Chapter 68

## Breakthrough #6

It was a familiar colour.

A cog wheel turned in In-gong's head as he saw the purple evil influence. Many things came into his mind at this time.

The monsters from the north that had appeared on Enger Plains.

The group of people who killed General Kashubal and devised some type of ploy regarding Thunderdoom Fortress.

They were connected. The thing they had in common was the purple energy.

Were they also from the north? Or maybe they had contact with the north.

At the same time, one more thing came up. There was no evidence, but it didn't disappear from his head.

The Red Lightning tribe.

How did they control Enkidu's swamp mammoths? Someone must have given them the method. And what was the reason for telling them?

The small temple.

It was the place where Green Wind had stayed and contained the magic that maintained the green plains.

How did the monsters of the north discover the secret of the small temple that even the centaurs, who had lived on Enger Plains for thousands of years, didn't know?

Both of these had one thing in common:

An elder dragon.

The chimera belonging to Enkidu...

Green Wind that had come from the magic of a fragment of Ainkel...

He got this far, but there was still something essential missing.

It was added here. He needed to put everything together!

‘Master! Look ahead!’

Green Wind’s cry interrupted In-gong’s thoughts. A roaring zombie dragon had appeared and a purple light could be seen from the holes where its eyes should be. It was like facing Balkarova at the Northern Limit Line.

He was hostile toward In-gong. The shadow puppets, the 3rd party which had committed suicide, had long been swallowed.

Black Dragon Partizan, a wicked dragon who had died from the spear, Askaron, just before tasting the sweet fruit of victory.

Due to the grudge, the purple evil influence around the dragon was truly enormous. It was enough to make him dizzy.

With a roar that shook the whole fortress, the zombie dragon Partizan launched into movements. The rotten bones dragged against the ground while the corrupted wings spread out and covered the ceiling of the central plaza.

Felicia made a sound. As White Eagle flew hastily toward Felicia, In-gong saw something moving when everyone else was stunned.

Kwang kwang kwang kwang!

The highest ranked guardian was running.

The last remaining of the five top ranked guardians in Thunderdoom Fortress hadn’t forgotten its enemy. The zombie dragon’s defeat was much more important than the shadow puppets.



The other dungeon guardians also responded to the zombie dragon. They abandoned the shadow puppets they had been fighting so far and rushed behind the highest ranked guardian. The main location of the battlefield changed in an instant.

Felicia focused. Turning her gaze toward In-gong, she saw the shadow puppets. They had gained a new power, the zombie dragon, and didn't cling to the dungeon guardians. Some of them started running in the direction of In-gong's party.

"Fire!"

Felicia created a fire barrier to block their path. At that moment, the roar of the zombie dragon and the sound of thunder shook the fortress. The zombie dragon and highest ranked guardian were colliding.

"Karaa!"

Carack shouted, shaking his axe. The purple energy around the zombie dragon spread to the bodies of the shadow puppets. Just like the casios, they forgot about the horrors of death and jumped through the fire barrier. Despite their burning bodies, they kept running toward Felicia. Some wanted to use the fire on their bodies as a means of attack.

Carack and Karma protected Felicia, who then increased the power of the fire barrier as In-gong crossed it on White Eagle.

He crashed into the back of a shadow puppet trying to reach Carack and exchanged glances with Felicia. They didn't talk, but the two people instinctively sensed that they were thinking the same thing.

They had to take down the zombie dragon. If the dungeon guardians were defeated, he would go after In-gong's party next.

'He isn't secure yet. I can feel it. The more time passes, the more disadvantageous it will be for us. You should hurry.'

Green Wind said. Felicia made a similar remark just as he finished listening to Green Wind's words.

"The dragon is still shaky. The ceremony was done in a rush. I can feel an uneasy flow of mana. If we happen to destroy the core of the magic power..."

It was up to there. Not only Felicia but In-gong, Carack and Karma all looked at the same place. Felicia lowered the top of the fire barrier in order to see.

The colossal power was being concentrated. Even Carack and Karma, who were ignorant about mana, couldn't help feeling it.

In-gong sensed it intuitively.

This was the power of a dragon.

Even though it had lost its reason and become a monster, it still had its strength. That was the only evidence that the presence in front of him was a dragon.

Dragon breath.

A purple pillar emerged from his mouth. Balkarova's dragon breath was of no comparison as this pillar not only swallowed the left shoulder of the highest ranked guardian but also stretched on for hundreds of meters. The shadow puppets in its path were literally obliterated.

A huge hole was drilled. A new hole was drilled in the front passage of the central plaza, causing the area to start collapsing. A huge shaking affected the whole fortress.

Time stopped at the spectacular sight. At least, everyone who gathered in the central plaza thought so.

Carack could barely breathe. At the same time, the sight was so absurd that they couldn't help laughing.

"This is when it is still not secure?"

This? That monster?!

'It isn't secure! His breath weapon is limited!'

Green Wind's shout was like a thunderbolt. In-gong agreed. Even normal dragons

were limited in the number of breath weapons they could use in a day. A resurrected zombie dragon should only be able to use it two or three times.

The highest ranked guardian knew this as well. Therefore, it grabbed a giant hammer with its one remaining arm and rushed forward. It trampled on the shadow puppets and tried to hit the zombie dragon.

In-gong couldn't just watch the guardian fight. He took Askaron out of the inventory. Askaron emitted a golden aura as if it sensed the existence of the zombie dragon and changed its form to a more militant shape.

It was now in the form of a lance suitable for a human. Askaron, a weapon created by a dwarf magic engineer, knew the most appropriate form for its new master. The handle disappeared and a part designed to be gripped by fists was created instead. The part of the guard originally designed to protect the hand was raised further and several jets sprang up between the cracks. The length, which had been two meters long, was shortened to 1.5 meters.

It was a stabbing type weapon. Lightning poured from the lance and charged the air.

In-gong held Askaron with Earth Quaker. It seemed the combination was uncomfortable as Earth Quaker gave a low growl, but now wasn't the time for that.

In-gong climbed aboard White Eagle again. Felicia once again raised the fire barrier and the highest ranked guardian's hammer launched thunderbolts.

Kwakang!

White Eagle took off. As a thunderbolt struck the zombie dragon's chest, he screamed and raised two of his legs. Even as the thunderbolt dug into his chest, he pushed the highest ranked guardian to the ground.

The sound of the screaming and the earth collapsing caused terrible confusion. In-gong concentrated aura on his right fist as White Eagle moved closer. The zombie dragon's purple aura reached out to capture In-gong.

It was like a tsunami.

The zombie dragon's evil will covered In-gong. Thanks to the Tears of a Dark Elf, his

mind wasn't disturbed, but his body was momentarily affected.

The zombie dragon didn't miss this opening. He grabbed the highest ranked guardian and rotated, causing the tail that was approximately 10 meters long to flash through the air. In-gong felt like he was rushing into a wall.

Both In-gong and Green Wind couldn't respond quickly enough to the surprise attack as the tail was moving at a terrifying pace.

"Shutra!"

Felicia shrieked. In-gong's body was exposed to a brutal force and fell to the ground.

'Master! Master!'

Green Wind's cries poured out from White Eagle next to him, but In-gong couldn't reply. He couldn't breathe properly. His body felt such tremendous pain that it reached the point where the pain was forgotten.

Carack sped toward In-gong. Felicia opened the fire barrier that was blocking the shadow puppets and Karma escorted her over.

Once again, there was the sound of thunder.

"Shutra! Shutra!"

Felicia fell next to In-gong and hurriedly cast recovery magic. She didn't stop there and ordered Karma to feed In-gong recovery potions.

"Blessing! Can't you use the gandharva's blessing?"

Carack shouted while wielding his axe at the shadow puppets.

His stamina recovered as an effect of leveling up.

However, that couldn't happen. The number of defeated enemies was too small after he caught Balkarova to level up.

Felicia continued casting recovery magic. After In-gong roared from the use of an

awakening potion, Karma poured a new potion into his mouth.

“Cough!”

In-gong’s breath was unclogged. At that moment, the second breath weapon that Green Wind was concerned about crossed the central plaza once again. He didn’t know what was going on, but there was a great roar in the distance and a crashing sound.

In-gong looked at the mini-map. The shadow puppets were overwhelming the dungeon guardians. It was clear that the zombie dragon was smashing the highest ranked guardian.

There was no time. He had to end the zombie dragon while the highest ranked guardian was still standing.

‘Master.’

In-gong raised his upper body slowly. He wanted to collapse and fall asleep but he persisted. He took out various recovery potions from his inventory and drank them like they were water.

"Please draw its attention."

In-gong said and Felicia smiled with a worried face.

"Shouldn't this be the time when we start running away?"

“Sorry.”

"I understand. It is also unlike a dark elf to run away. Instead, I can't do it twice."

In-gong nodded. After the awakening potion, he was somehow able to forget the pain.

"Once will be enough."

It was pointless to exchange blows with a huge monster. He had to stop its breath with one blow like Tiny Spark had done in the past.

‘Master.’

Green Wind's magic wound around In-gong. It was the magic that she had used previously on Enger Plains. It seemed like he could feel Green Wind.

In-gong watched the front instead of flying. He collected aura like he was going to use Gigantic Piston.

"Let's begin."

Felicia declared as thunder rang out once again.

# Chapter 69

## Breakthrough #7

Karma, with Felicia on her back, climbed up some wreckage quickly. A terrible sight caught the eyes of the both of them.

The highest ranked guardian was on the verge of being destroyed. The thunder hammer crashed to the ground while the shield was crushed like the left arm.

The zombie dragon, that was roaring from above the highest ranked guardian, discovered Felicia and Karma.

He wasn't in a normal state either. The wounds on the dragon's chest were wide open and one wing was broken.

"Run!"

Karma ran forward. Felicia made a wall of fire on all sides, attracting the gazes of the zombie dragon and shadow puppets.

The dungeon guardians rushed to the zombie dragon while the shadow puppets flocked to Felicia and arrows and spears covered the air above her.

Felicia hurriedly called the wind spirit but it wasn't enough. She couldn't push all the arrows and spears away. Karma closed her eyes while Felicia stared at the spears. A white object blocked the area in front of Felicia!

Kakakang!

White Eagle blocked the arrows and spears while Green Wind protected Felicia and cried out to In-gong,

'Master!'

"Kuraha!"

It was very similar to when they had been in the trap zone. Carack set up the magic shield in front of him and passed through the fire barriers set up by Felicia with In-gong following him. The two men reached the side of the zombie dragon.

Numerous eyes gazed upon them. The shadow puppets rushed toward In-gong, but they were still quite a distance away. The dungeon guardians saw Ascalon and interfered desperately with the shadow puppets.

Carack lowered his posture and revealed his back. In-gong jumped off Carack's back and shoulders, then used the explosive force of Divine Beast Authority and jumped almost a dozen meters.

Unable to launch a third breath weapon, the zombie dragon tried to aim his tail at In-gong again.

However, the highest ranked guardian didn't allow it. It used its one arm left to grab the zombie dragon. The resistance only lasted a few seconds but that was enough.

The zombie dragon was off-balance. The tail couldn't harm In-gong as he stabbed in the air with Ascalon.

At that moment, an enormous amount of power emerged from the nozzles on Ascalon. It was like a lance thrusting through the air.

Green Wind and Felicia watched breathlessly. However, the zombie dragon didn't stay still. He hurriedly emitted a purple aura instead of the breath. The purple energy became an intangible wall that tried to stop Ascalon.

It seemed to work. In fact, Ascalon's rush was blocked for a moment like it was being held by a gigantic glue.

However, In-gong didn't stop.

He had one thing that the brave dwarf warrior Tiny Spark didn't have when using Ascalon...

'Dragon Blood!'



The dragon power woke up and Earth Quaker showed its true power. Ascalon rebelled and In-gong suffered terrible pain, but he endured it and used the power of Conquest to dominate Ascalon. He had to take advantage of this to hit the enemy. He added the strength of Gigantic Piston to Ascalon's power!

Kwakakakakang!

The Ascalon Strike regained its momentum and was like a lightning bolt. The golden flash broke through the purple wall and struck the chest of the zombie dragon. He tore into the chest that was already weak from hundreds of years passing. In-gong didn't stop there but used more strength to dig it in deeper. Magic power was what kept the zombie dragon alive and In-gong was now destroying the dragon heart that was the very source of power that allowed the zombie dragon to move. In-gong penetrated through it!

The zombie dragon shrieked. As purple energy leaked from every hole, including its eyes and mouth, the highest ranked guardian moved using the last of its strength. Its fist struck the already shattered chest.

A violent explosion took place. The purple aura exploded, the zombie dragon collapsed and the aura around the shadow puppets disappeared, just like when Balkarova had died.

In-gong rolled across the floor. He lifted Ascalon and swallowed a moan. A pure white light wound around In-gong.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Boss: Zombie Dragon Partizan has been defeated.]

[Title: Dragon Slayer (Beginner) has been acquired.]

The pain in his body subsided rapidly. In-gong sprang up. His legs trembled despite the recovery effect of gaining three levels. It was the result of using aura to the extreme, ignoring Ascalon as it tried to repel the dragon blood and using Conquest to dominate it.

‘Master!’

White Eagle flew to In-gong. The translucent Green Wing was sitting on top of the white shield. He could see how worried she was by the expression on her face.

In-gong grinned and White Eagle returned to his left arm. He placed Ascalon in his inventory and looked in front of him.

The highest ranked guardian didn’t move as it lay in the wreckage of the zombie dragon. The shadow puppets, who had lost the purple aura, went crazy and scattered. Meanwhile, the shadow puppets in black robes, who had been directing them, sat down on the ground like they had received a big shock.

Felicia and Karma ran to In-gong while the dungeon guardians surrounded them. It was because the highest ranked guardian transferred all its authority to In-gong before dying. The highest ranked guardian hadn’t forgotten about Ascalon.

“Shall we continue?”

They had knocked down the zombie dragon but the battle hadn’t ended yet. After Felicia’s words, In-gong responded by moving the dungeon guardians. The dungeon guardians rushed towards the shadow puppets who were confused by the effect of losing the purple aura.

"My shoulder is too sore."

Carack, who had been In-gong’s footstool, stretched out and complained. Rather than Felicia using recovery magic, she handed over a potion. She wasn’t in a state where she could use magic right now.

The party watched the dungeon guardians fight. Fatigue couldn’t be restored by various recovery potions, so they just watched the fight from the background.

How much time had passed?

In-gong was sitting down silently with his eyes closed.

This mission was almost over. Once the battle with the shadow puppets finished, they

could relax and enjoy the items. Despite the black dragon Partizan's body being destroyed, it could still be useful.

However, he wondered why...

Despite it being 10 minutes since the zombie dragon had been destroyed, he couldn't release his tension. Rather than feeling the sense of accomplishment that he had felt when he killed Mustafa and Balkarova, he felt tension and anxiety.

What was it?

Was it because all the pieces hadn't aligned yet? Or because the shadow puppets weren't all dead?

No, it was different.

An ominous feeling.

Due to Protagonist Correction, it was slowly irritating his senses.

In-gong raised his head and at that moment, a new collapse shook the central plaza.

Kwaaaaaang!

The zombie dragon's breath weapon had broken the foundation twice and rubble now fell once again. However, the direction of the force was different. It came from the outside, not inside. After the third collapse, light poured into the central plaza that had been underground for hundreds of years.

Felicia, who had been sitting and relaxing on the floor, got up. The dungeon guardians stopped fighting momentarily while the shadow puppets were overcome with joy.

In-gong realized the reason for his ominous feeling.

A man emerged from the new hole. Instead of a purple aura, he wore blue armour and a helmet that resembled the head of a dragon. Holding a spear, he stood on a pile of rubble and looked at the shattered zombie dragon.

"I'm too late."

He muttered in a low voice. The central plaza was silent, but his voice was coming from too far away.

However, In-gong could hear it clearly. He didn't know why, but the man's voice was clear as he took light steps forward.

"It was a mistake since the 2nd Prince didn't come here."

'2nd Prince.'

'Mistake.'

'Didn't come here.'

In-gong felt like he had been struck by lightning.

General Kashubal had failed the mission.

Everyone had thought the mission would be given to Zephyr.

The purpose of these people wasn't Ascalon or Partizan.

Their real purpose was to lure Zephyr here. They had killed General Kashubal to call Zephyr.

Although they had waited for Zephyr to arrive, In-gong and Felicia had been the ones who showed up instead.

So, the plan had been changed. The priority had been given to securing Partizan and Ascalon instead.

This story seemed correct. The cogs, that had stopped, started to rotate again in his head.

However, a question still remained:

Why Zephyr?

What purpose did they have for luring Zephyr here?

'Resist!'

A voice woke In-gong up. It wasn't Green Wind. It was the voice of the golden-crowned white woman.

In-gong hurriedly produced the power of Conquest. The man's gaze shifted from the zombie dragon to In-gong.

The purple aura...

Its source was the blue aura.

That man wasn't the source of that power. It was just a small part of him. However, even that was overwhelming. The power of death struck In-gong's soul.

The forces of conquest and death collided in the air. They canceled each other out and disappeared.

In-gong activated his white aura while the man frowned with confusion. Instead of continuing the invisible battle with In-gong, he raised the blue aura like flames. He swung his long spear and said lightly,

"I will clean up whatever is left."

He took a step. At that moment, In-gong knew. That man was more powerful than the zombie dragon.

In-gong squeezed out every last bit of his aura. He hadn't completely recovered in the aftermath of his fight with the zombie dragon, but he couldn't give up.

"Prince, I've enjoyed knowing you so far."

Carack said while lifting his axe like he was going to throw it. Karma also grabbed a weapon instead of throwing up in fear, while Felicia smiled bitterly and raised both arms.

"I don't know what he is but don't give up."

“Don’t give up.”

In-gong formed a fist. Earth Quaker gave the familiar growling response.

The man took a step forward. The dungeon guardians gathered by In-gong’s side and Green Wind soared up from White Eagle, declaring,

‘Master was a good owner. I don’t regret following Master from Enger Plains.’

"Good, let’s stick our death flags in this place."

In-gong made a joke that only he could understand and then focused on the man.

The man took his third step and a blue light emitted from the spear in his hand.

Then at that moment,

Just as a new battle was about to begin...

“Let’s do it.”

A new voice interrupted.

It wasn’t a simple voice that spread in the heavy silence.

Everyone’s gazes, that had been aimed at the man holding the spear, shifted to a different place. Even the man with the spear was forced to look.

“I went to see Prince at the Demon King’s Palace only to find that he had already left. Then once I arrived at the fortress, I heard Prince and Princess were in an emergency, so I wandered after you.”

The owner of the new voice stood in the opening where the man with the spear had appeared. His hair and beard was half grey and half white, while his clothes were snow-white. A dull sword hung at his waist.

It was the first time In-gong had seen him. However, In-gong knew who the man was the moment he saw him. Felicia, who had been determined about facing death,

shouted with joy.

Sword Duke Ishgard.

The strongest swordsman of the previous era who had raised the demon king Mitra!

He didn't say anything else and just pulled his sword out with a grin.

# Chapter 70

## Sword Duke

In Knight Saga, the sword duke, Ishgard, was similar to the elder dragons.

He was an incredible strong and great existence, but he only existed in the background. There were no events where the main character had to face him, so he only existed in the background.

However, like the elder dragons, his presence wasn't something that could be passed over.

He was the master of Mitra, the demon king, and was the final barrier protecting the sura's sanctuary.

When Zephyr was raised to the throne of the demon king, he didn't get involved, saying that it was natural for a strong man to become the demon king.

He never showed up when the warrior Locke came to the Demon World to overthrow the demon king.

Sword Duke Ishgard...

Before the demon king, Mitra, ascended the throne, he was called a sword demon or a sword deity.

Knight Saga's strongest swordsman.

Now that the demon king, Mitra, was suffering from a disease, he was the strongest in the Demon King's Palace, excluding the five captains.

The sura's strongest monster that even the demon king had to beg to be taught by:

Sword Duke Ishgard.



As soon as the sword duke picked up his sword, the world changed. Even the air was different. It wasn't wrong to say that an invisible force covered the entire central plaza.

Felicia stopped breathing and In-gong felt the same sensation as when he had faced the demon king.

It was different from when he realized Chris and Caitlin's strength. In-gong felt like he was facing a wonder of nature... like a huge, pouring waterfall, lightning or a volcanic eruption.

It was impossible for the current In-gong to tell how strong the person truly was.

The man with the spear also emitted a strong energy, but he no longer dominated the situation like when he had first appeared.

Carack swallowed his saliva while Karma flopped down on the ground unconsciously. At that moment, the man's spear pierced the ground.

The blue aura exploded and the oppressive energy headed toward the sword duke. It was a heavy stab but the sword duke didn't move from his place. He just swung his sword.

Felicia didn't know what happened. There was a huge wave and the ground split apart violently. It was like a giant claw had scratched the ground.

The man with the spear started his second strike. He rotated his sword toward the sword duke, but the sword duke still didn't move his legs. The second wave shook the central plaza.

And then the third...

The sword duke finally took his first step. At that moment, the man dropped his spear. He leapt through the air toward the sword duke and exploded with a huge burst of blue aura!

It was literally an explosion. The blue energy, that had been condensed down to one point, swelled hundreds of times and a huge roar swept through the central plaza.

Felicia shrieked as she watched.

That wasn't all. It was a real explosion. The terrible power of the blue flames filling their vision could be felt. It was a power that could crush the central plaza as well as the whole fortress.

And at that moment, the explosion was split in two. It was like it had been neatly cut by a sword and was destroyed.

In-gong didn't know the principles. The party was surprised as the blue energy had split in two and simply vanished.

Carack was stiff as his mouth gaped open while Karma didn't know what was going on. However, In-gong embraced Felicia.

"Kya?"

Felicia shouted at the sudden motion, but In-gong didn't stop. He crouched down, pulling Felicia with him and shouted,

"Green Wind!"

White Eagle responded to In-gong's call. The metal plates opened like wings to protect In-gong and Felicia from a new explosion.

Kwakang!

Kwang! Kwang! Kwang!

Explosions occurred in succession. In-gong looked over the top of White Eagle as he held Felicia and was able to see what had happened.

The shadow puppets were exploding.

There were some who held onto a dungeon guardian as they exploded while others stayed in their spots. Some of them exploded in the vicinity of In-gong, but White Eagle blocked all of those attacks.

"Prince!"

Carack lifted his shield to protect himself and Karma. Instead of responding to Carack, In-gong glanced beyond White Eagle and understood the implications of the explosions.

They hadn't self-destructed in order to deal a blow to In-gong's party. It was in order to block all information about them from getting out.

The man with the spear. He was strong. He seemed like he could kill the zombie dragon in one shot.

However, such a powerful person chose to self-destruct. The sword duke had overwhelming strength, but the man who didn't hesitate to make such a choice was also amazing.

Who was he? Who were the people who sent him?

The simultaneous explosions didn't last long. Once the mini-map confirmed that all the shadow puppets had been destroyed, In-gong released Felicia and stood up.

"Well done, Greenie."

In-gong praised White Eagle lightly. As expected, he heard Green Wind's complaining voice.

'Master! I am not Greenie. If I am Greenie, then Carack is... Carack?'

This wasn't it, the frown drawn on Green Wind's face seemed to say. In-gong laughed and recovered White Eagle before observing the status of the rest of the party.

"Are you okay?"

"I'm ok... ay. I'm just a little surprised."

Felicia, who was still catching her breath, got up after responding. He turned toward Carack who was pulling up the weak-legged Karma. It seemed like the new shield he just got from the Demon King's Palace was almost gone.

Lastly, In-gong turned toward the sword duke. The huge explosion from the man with

a spear was destroyed by his step and he was now stepping forward, towards them.

Felicia whispered from next to In-gong.

“Sword Duke. He presented you with the dragon leather.”

In-gong nodded at the introduction and calmed his breath. Even though he knew that the sword duke was an ally, his heart was still pounding.

Finally, the sword duke arrived in front of In-gong’s party.

He was tall. There were many wrinkles on his face but strangely, he didn’t seem weak or old. It wasn’t due to the brilliant strength he had shown just a few minutes ago, but because he was dignified and none of the features of an elderly man could be seen.

He gave up on discovering the status of the sword duke. Fending off the explosion hadn’t been simple, but it was impossible to guess how much strength the sword duke had consumed.

He smiled towards In-gong and Felicia and suddenly reached out to Felicia.

“6th Princess!”

Felicia lost her spirit. It was because the sword duke placed his hands beneath her armpits and raised Felicia like she was a child.

“Kyak! Put me down!”

Felicia blushed and yelled, but the sword duke didn’t listen. Rather, he laughed even louder and threw Felicia into the air. He caught her waist and spun her round and round.

“Hahaha! You are so big now! You were just a tiny girl the last time I saw you! You’ve become a beautiful woman!”

“Put me down! Down!”

Felicia whined while laughing and after a few more turns, the sword duke finally placed Felicia on the ground.

"This isn't something to grumble about."

The sword duke laughed heartily and Felicia was too busy gasping to refute it. Carack and Karma blinked as they didn't know what was going on right now.

Was the old man in front of them the same monster as before?

After he touched Felicia's head one last time, the sword duke turned toward In-gong. As the surprised In-gong jumped into an alert position, the sword duke smiled happily and asked with folded arms,

"9th Prince, do you like my present?"

The sword duke touched In-gong's Dragon Scale Greaves. In-gong controlled his breathing and replied calmly,

"I was able to create a great piece thanks to you. Thank you."

There was no blood relation between the sword duke and the demon king's children, but he was the demon king's master. He was an elder of the sura, so the demon king's children referred to him as a grandfather.

He spoke casually to Felicia, but his words seemed a little more polite towards In-gong.

"I'm glad that it was useful."

Unlike Felicia, it seemed like he hadn't met Shutra yet.

Instead of the pleasure in his eyes when he saw Felicia, the sword duke looked at In-gong with curiosity.

He turned towards the shattered bodies of the highest ranked guardian and the black dragon Partizan.

"So, what happened?"

In-gong told the sword duke all of his speculations. It wasn't a secret and In-gong thought that the sword duke was at a level to deal with the issue.

As the sword duke listened without saying anything, Felicia made a confused face in the middle.

"Those people were after Zephyr orabeoni?"

"Perhaps. It isn't clear, but the man with the spear said that we had come instead of 2nd Prince."

Despite being siblings, In-gong called him 2nd Prince instead of Zephyr hyung.

Carack asked In-gong,

"Um, I couldn't hear that. What about Princess? Princess has the best ears among all of us."

He had already witnessed Felicia's hearing a few times on Enger Plains. She shook her head.

"I didn't hear it."

The man with the spear was a considerable distance away and even his appearance itself was shocking.

Carack asked In-gong again with a cautious look,

"Prince, were you perhaps hearing things?"

"No, it is hard to explain, but I heard it clearly."

In-gong didn't know why he could hear the man's voice either, but it absolutely wasn't a hallucination.

Felicia nodded.

"It is strange, but it makes sense. Rather, it feels like a question has been resolved. It wasn't just me, but almost everyone in the Demon King's Palace thought that Zephyr orabeoni would receive this mission. If this situation was created for the purpose of luring Zephyr orabeoni, then it would explain the death of General Kashubal and why

they attempted to capture this fortress so late.”

Just like In-gong, Felicia also had doubts.

“The question is, what purpose do they have for pursuing Zephyr orabeoni.”

The simplest answer was to get rid of Zephyr, but Felicia didn’t think so. Felicia couldn’t properly measure the strength of the man with the spear, but she didn’t think that Zephyr, the strongest royal child, would be hit by this preparation.

Of course, variables existed. It was possible that they made some other arrangements for Zephyr:

The drake ogre, Mustafa, and skeleton king, Balkarova, that had appeared on Enger Plains...

And the zombie dragon and man with a spear at Thunderdoom Fortress.

As tension filled everyone’s faces, the sword duke spoke.

“I can understand the general situation. It is a pretty interesting story.”

His expression was the same as when he first appeared. In-gong asked,

“Sword Duke, do you have any guesses?”

“No. This is the Demon World. These type of people have always been around. Prince and Princess just need to grow well in the future. There is always a countermeasure.”

The sword duke laughed playfully and formed fists. It was a simple move, but it had the power to overwhelm the surroundings.

“Become stronger. If you develop the power to break through any danger, then all problems will be solved.

It was a simple but clear answer. Indeed, he had broken down the threat to In-gong’s party with clear power.

Carack stared at the sword duke with his full respect while Karma’s eyes shone.

Only Felicia sighed at his words and said,

"Then Sword Duke, why are you here? Although I am grateful for the help."

The unexpected appearance of the man with the spear hadn't led to the sword duke's appearance, but Felicia already knew the answer as did In-gong.

The sword duke looked at In-gong and said,

"I came to see 9th Prince."

It was the answer they had expected, but In-gong and Felicia still waited for the sword duke's next words. The sword duke met their expectations.

"The demon king seems very interested in 9th Prince. I was at the sanctuary when I received news that the court gathering was overturned."

'Sanctuary?'

In-gong made a confused sound. In Knight Saga, hadn't the sword duke been wandering around in seclusion?

The sword duke continued,

"As 6th Princess knows, I spend most of the year at the sanctuary. However, I couldn't just sit back and wait."

Sanctuary.

It was the sura's sanctuary as even Zephyr didn't know its location.

It would be nice to go there. Maybe the sword duke was the guardian of the sanctuary.

In-gong once again focused on the sword duke's words. The sword duke gazed at In-gong and said,

"The demon king never acts without a reason. I don't know why the demon king acted like he did at the court gathering, but there must be a reason."



It hadn't merely been a whim or a change of heart.

There was something special about the 9th Prince.

"So, I became interested, even more so now that I've seen you directly."

The sword duke stared at In-gong. It was the same expression as before, but his eyes were different. It felt like the sword duke's eyes were penetrating inside him.

Then the sword duke smiled and In-gong lowered his eyes.

The demon king had never done something similar to his other children, including Zephyr.

"9th Prince, would you like to learn from me?"

The teachings of the sword.

On behalf of the Demon King's Palace, Felicia's mouth dropped open.

# Chapter 71

## Sword Duke #2

There were no formal disciples of the sword duke.

Except for the demon king, Mitra, there was no one who he taught properly. Even the sura, Gallehed, the strongest among the five captains, had only sparred with him a few times.

Moreover, it had been the sword duke who offered his teachings first.

It was unheard of. None of the children of the demon king had ever been recognized like this.

However, he was now offering it to In-gong.

Felicia's mouth dropped open while Karma's eyes shone. Carack also let out an impressed cry.

The sword duke was laughing, but his eyes weren't smiling.

Deep blue eyes... It was like there was a hidden darkness in his blue eyes that saw through In-gong.

In-gong swallowed his saliva. Although he had been anticipating this a little bit, his chest pounded wildly at the offer.

The strongest presence in the Demon World said he would teach In-gong.

This was a hidden event and it was really happening!

"It doesn't mean that you will become my disciple."

The sword duke said with a smile. Carack blinked with confusion while Felicia snorted.

However, the sword duke didn't pay attention to the two of them. He was only looking at In-gong.

"I can't afford to nurture a disciple. Furthermore... Prince has already learnt Divine Beast Authority. There is no need to learn my sword."

In-gong had never fought in front of the sword duke. He had only confronted the man carrying a spear with his white aura. However, the sword duke had intervened after that, so it was impossible to know the type of martial arts In-gong used.

However, that didn't make a difference to the sword duke.

The sword duke's blue eyes stared into In-gong's red eyes. Unlike his laughing expression, the sword duke's eyes didn't show any pleasure at all.

In-gong sensed it intuitively.

Even now, he was reading information about In-gong. He didn't know whether it was magic or an innate talent to see a person's ability. In-gong felt like he was being disassembled.

Then there was a person who exclaimed belatedly,

"Wait, Divine Beast Authority? Not Beast Authority but Divine Beast Authority?"

Felicia stared at In-gong with shock, but her astonishment didn't last long.

Felicia understood.

There was an oddly deep bond between In-gong, Chris and Caitlin. Even Chris, who usually disliked the other children of the demon king, was concerned about In-gong.

He had taught In-gong Divine Beast Authority that was normally only passed down through the royal family of the lycanthropes. It was foolish for Felicia to not know what it meant.

Felicia felt frustrated and disappointed, but she didn't express it and In-gong couldn't afford to look at Felicia.

The sword duke continued to speak,

"Prince's body contains Divine Beast Authority and a mixture of other powers. Even I can't see all of them... It is really interesting. Moreover, the many forces aren't pushing against each other. They are cooperating nicely."

What were the powers that the sword duke read? Did it include Conquest?

"I think that Prince has just managed to learn Divine Beast Authority. At most, it has been a few months. However, this achievement is really amazing."

In-gong felt a cold sweat forming. The sword duke showed no apparent hostility toward In-gong. Even now, he was only expressing admiration and curiosity. However, In-gong couldn't help feeling tense. How many things could those eyes see through?

"The reason why the demon king showed interest is probably different from me. When 2nd Prince was born, the Demon World had instinctively sensed his strength... He was born with a crazy innate talent, but even then, the demon king didn't express any interest."

In-gong felt lightheaded.

The sword duke's evaluation of Zephyr was beyond his imagination. A strong existence that the Demon World had instinctively felt when he was born. What on earth? He couldn't even figure out what level it meant.

Moreover, the talk about the demon king...

The sword duke assumed that the demon king's interest wasn't due to the various powers inside In-gong.

Then why had the demon king shown interest in In-gong? Was it because he endured the demon king's gaze at the first court gathering?

The sword duke raised his body. In-gong's gaze naturally followed the sword duke who shrugged and said,

"Anyhow, I am interested in Prince. I would like to convey some enlightenment to Prince, so what do you think?"

In-gong closed his eyes. He drove all questions from his mind and only focused on the sword duke.

The sword duke's teachings...

There was no reason to refuse.

He wasn't In-gong's enemy. The sword duke's gaze was penetrating, but it wasn't hostile.

In-gong took a deep breath and looked at the sword duke with a stiff expression. He stared straight into the sword duke's eyes and said with an awkward smile,

"Please teach me."

Carack clenched his fists. Felicia sighed with relief and smiled.

The sword duke also smiled. He raised his hand to In-gong's shoulder.

"I came to Prince to teach you an aura management technique and a few skills. I will leave them to Prince's talent to learn."

"I understand."

The most common situation was for the conversation to stop here. In order to learn aura management techniques, some conditions were needed.

However, that wasn't the case for the sword duke.

"Then let's begin."

Felicia, who had thought she couldn't be confused anymore, was surprised by the sword duke's words.

The sword duke stretched out two big hands and grabbed In-gong's head. He closed his eyes and triggered his aura.

In-gong also closed his eyes. His sharp instinct urged for compliance instead of

resistance.

The aura of the sword duke was a brilliant gold. Just as when Caitlin had first taught In-gong about aura, the sword duke's golden aura led In-gong's aura. It was a completely different path from Divine Beast Authority.

[The S rank technique, Sura Heart Law Lv1, has been learnt.]

As always, In-gong instantly incorporated the new technique. There was an elusive smile on the sword duke's face as his golden aura started to invade every inch of In-gong's body.

In-gong realized that the aura in his body was activated in a different way. His breathing method was also changing.

As he acquired knowledge. Images flashed in his head. It was the appearance of the sword duke displaying some techniques.

They were the skills that the sword duke had promised.

One was a new movement. If Divine Beast Authority was explosive movement, the new method taught by the sword duke was the wind. It was fast and light, and sometimes rough like a gale.

The other was a spread out technique rather than a punch. It was a pushing technique, not one that destroyed the enemy like Gigantic Piston. In-gong was given an impression of the power that spread from the sword duke. It felt like he had actually learnt the techniques in reality.

The last one was a feet technique, Involving kicking at a simple, not flashy pace. However, it was quick and powerful.

[Sura Heart Law - Wind Style Lv1 has been learnt.]

[Sura Heart Law - Great Mountain Lv1 has been learnt.]

[Sura Heart Law - Lightning Lv1 has been learnt.]

Sura Heart Law and three other techniques were transferred to him.

In-gong admired the method of transferring techniques, but the sword duke was even more impressed.

In-gong had acquired the skills too quickly. Although the sword duke had used a direct injection method, the speed exceeded what he had expected.

'A genius comparable to 2nd Prince?'

No, it wasn't like that. There was talent in combat, but not so much towards learning techniques.

Then what was this speed? Had the sword duke misjudged the talent of the 9th Prince? It wasn't somebody else but the sword duke himself who had made a mistake?

Then it was good. It was a pleasant mistake. The sword duke laughed and finishing injecting the techniques happily.

However, he couldn't. It wasn't because In-gong rejected it, nor was there a problem with the transfer process. The transfer technique was done properly and In-gong learnt all the techniques that the sword duke wanted to teach.

However, the changes in In-gong weren't over.

A white aura flashed like fire from In-gong's entire body. Carack, Karma and Felicia didn't know the situation, but the sword duke was shocked. He was panicked by the changes taking place in In-gong's body.

[S rank technique Sura Heart Law has been learnt.]

[The level of Protagonist Body has increased due to the repeated learnings.]

[The level of Protagonist Body Lv2 skill - Hundreds Poisons Resistance has risen. Once Hundred Poisons Resistance reaches Lv3, it can evolve into Thousand Poisons Resistance.]

[Protagonist Body Lv3 skill - Harmony Lv1 has been acquired.]

The aura inside In-gong's body was split into two. One chose the Divine Beast Authority aura management method while the other chose the Sura Heart Law method.

It was a phenomenon that the sword duke was seeing for the very first time. Even if he had seen something similar, 99% of the people had their bodies ruined by the opposing auras.

The white aura around In-gong swelled greatly. Carack, who had been admiring it until now, realized that something was wrong. Felicia also had an urgent expression on her face as she cried out.

The sword duke heard Felicia's voice. but he didn't try to restrain In-gong. He simply watched.

Carack alternated his gaze between In-gong and the sword duke. He looked toward Felicia like he was seeking a path, but Felicia didn't respond. She was staring at the sword duke with gritted teeth. She didn't know what she was hoping for, but she begged and prayed for In-gong.

'Master.'

Green Wind watched as In-gong closed his eyes and had the techniques transferred to him. As she saw the auras flowing violently, she was reminded of the Great Enkidu and Watcher Ainkel.

The powers of two different elder dragons. Despite the two powers being opposite of each other, In-gong had made them one.

This time as well, it was no different. The two auras running through different routes gradually became one. Not only did the auras combine together, but the aura method also became one.

Sura Heart Law and Divine Beast Authority.

Both of them were S rank. However, it was different now. The two didn't deny each other any longer.

[Sura Heart Law and Divine Beast Authority are in harmony.]  
[The S rank Divine Beast Authority has evolved.]



In-gong conquered Sura Heart Law and Divine Beast Authority. He was able to create a new technique because he ruled them in the truest sense.

It had the explosive power of Divine Beast Authority and the swiftness of Sura Heart Law.

It was a new power beyond the limit of a S rank!

[The SS rank technique, Divine Sura Authority Lv1, has been learnt.]

Divine Sura Authority...

However, this wasn't the end. In-gong used his saved skill points.

[The level of Divine Sura Authority has risen.]

[The level of Divine Sura Authority has risen.]

Divine Sura Authority Lv3.

The power springing from In-gong's depths formed a clear shape.

Carack became excited again while Felicia clasped both hands tensely as she stared at In-gong. Meanwhile, Karma prayed to Green Wind.

There was a light of wonder on the sword duke's face.

Then after a moment...

In-gong opened his eyes and a pure white aura was freed.

# Chapter 72

## Sword Duke #3

Aura was life force. A source of life that was connected with the soul and training life force which could allow the power of the soul to reach beyond its limits.

The sword duke stared at the warm light coming from In-gong's unconscious body. His aura soared like fire and illuminated the surroundings.

"Interesting."

The sword duke knew what was happening inside In-gong's body. He noticed that the aura in front of him had some characteristics of soul power, despite the accomplishment being low.

It was unexpected. He had never imagined this would happen when he decided to teach Sura Heart Law.

"I'd like to take him to the sanctuary."

However, he couldn't. He was frustrated because In-gong was so amazing.

"There is no understanding. It isn't done consciously... He did it unconsciously. It's hard to tell if this can be called a talent or something else."

He said in a voice full of admiration. Felicia, who had been listening by his side, grabbed the sword duke's arm like she couldn't bear it anymore.

"Sword Duke, what do you mean? Shutra is okay, right?"

The sword duke wasn't angry despite being tugged. He patted Felicia's head like he was comforting a small child.

"You don't have to worry about Prince. Shall we just keep observing him? He'll regain consciousness quickly. And about what happened... I just taught Prince how to use

Sura Heart Law, the aura management technique.”

The sword duke spoke lightly but Felicia wasn’t listening. She ignored the sword duke’s hands still stroking her head and covered her mouth with both hands.

“Sura Heart Law!”

Felicia knew about the aura management method. It was the aura management method that Gallehed, strongest of the five captains, had learnt. It was particularly well-known among the suras.

Yet he had taught In-gong Sura Heart Law.

Felicia looked back at In-gong hurriedly while Carack, who had been listening to the conversation, grunted with admiration.

Karma noticed his reaction and asked Carack in a small voice,

“Carack, what is Sura Heart Law?”

"I don't know but based on Princess' reaction, it seems to be great!"

The sword duke laughed at Carack’s answer.

"These are good friends. Prince seems to be good at finding them."

Carack smiled at the praise. Karma responded to the sword duke with a small, timid smile.

In this situation, Felicia was the only one serious as she grabbed the sword duke’s hand again.

“You only taught him Sura Heart Law?”

If the sword duke only taught Sura Heart Law, then In-gong wouldn’t have this response. There was something more important.

The sword duke spoke without hiding anything,

"Prince has combined Sura Heart Law with Divine Beast Authority."

"Huh?"

"Two different aura management techniques have been combined. Based on Divine Beast Authority, a better aura management technique has been born."

He shrugged like it wasn't that great.

Felicia fell into chaos again. Although she hadn't learnt aura, her brother Silvan Doomblade had outstanding skills in aura. Therefore, she couldn't easily accept the sword duke's words.

Combining different aura management methods?

So soon after learning one of them?

It defied common sense, but she didn't think that the sword duke was lying.

The sword duke spoke with a generous understanding.

"Even Prince doesn't understand it. It took place unconsciously. So, it is interesting. Frankly speaking, it is fun. Aside from 2nd Prince, there is another monster."

"Sword Duke."

Felicia called out with mixed emotions. Rather than responding, the sword duke turned to In-gong and exclaimed with shining eyes,

"He seems to be waking up."

The whirling aura around In-gong was now scattering. Focus started to appear in In-gong's eyes.

"Prince, have you regained consciousness?"

In-gong nodded slowly in response to the sword duke's question. He felt dizzy but it wasn't enough to make him collapse.

In-gong covered his face with both hands and breathed deeply as he tried to understand what had happened.

Divine Beast Authority had evolved into Divine Sura Authority. He had acquired a SS rank technique.

There had only been one SS rank technique that appeared in Knight Saga and that had been Locke's Warrior Sword.

However, it was different now. Divine Sura Authority had been added to the SS techniques and In-gong was the only one who knew Divine Sura Authority.

"Prince is more strange than I thought. I did well in coming here."

The sword duke's playful voice was heard from above him. In-gong removed his hands and faced the sword duke.

"Sword Duke."

"I won't ask. I also don't need a description. My interest isn't in the principles itself but the fact that Prince accomplished it."

He answered and adjusted his posture to In-gong's eye level. Then he asked,

"The name?"

He wondered about it. The sword duke already knew everything that had happened in In-gong's body.

Therefore, In-gong replied truthfully instead of lying,

"Divine Sura Authority."

"Divine Sura Authority... A simple but good name. I'll look forward to your seeing your accomplishments grow. I'll be watching."

The sword duke finished with a strange smile before stepping backwards. Then Felicia came to In-gong like she had been waiting.

"Shutra, are you okay?"

Felicia's eyes were red. In-gong laughed and nodded.

"Yes, I'm okay. Thank you for caring, Noona."

"You are okay. It's a good thing."

Felicia sighed with relief and Carack started to laugh heartily. Then the sword duke, who was watching, knocked against Felicia's shoulder.

"Princess, there is something I wanted to ask you."

"Me?"

"Yes. How familiar has 9th Prince and 6th Princess become?"

"Huh?"

Felicia narrowed her eyes, but the sword duke asked again with a serious expression.

"I mean it. How close are the two of you?"

Felicia glanced back reflexively at In-gong with an unsure expression. She covered her face and replied hesitantly,

"Well... I don't dislike him?"

Carack stared at Felicia incredulously while Karma held back her laughter. In-gong looked at Felicia's reddening ears and said mischievously,

"Really? What if I really like Noona?"

"Ohh!"

Felicia's face reddened. She made a helpless sound out of embarrassment.

The sword duke sighed,

"It is a bit strange to see such embarrassment, but it is good."

Instead of replying, Felicia simply pouted. The sword duke continued speaking,

"6th Princess, I am telling you to protect 9th Prince. Keep today's work a secret."

It was clear what he was talking about.

It was the birth of Divine Sura Authority; In-gong had created a new aura management method.

"There is already quite a lot of interest in 9th Prince. There is no need to increase the gazes."

Felicia nodded at the words. She was also aware of all the eyes on In-gong. The events at Thunderdoom Fortress would probably attract even more attention.

"You can tell 5th Prince. 7th Prince and 8th Princess are fine as well. They were the ones who taught him Divine Beast Authority."

"I understand. I'll do so."

Once again, Felicia made a relieved smile as she turned towards In-gong. In-gong was also smiling back at Felicia.

"Okay, then it will be nice to take a break after that."

The sword duke's words relieved all the tension at once. Then Felicia recalled something and asked the sword duke,

"Ah, that reminds me. Where is the hole that you came down from? Can we bring an exploration team down here?"

Thunderdoom Fortress' control room was in their hands, so they just needed to eat up the profit now. It was a good idea to bring an exploration team to conduct a full-scale investigation.

However, an unexpected reply came from the sword duke.

"It is possible, but do you really want to? There is no reason to do that."

"Huh?"

There was no reason to do that? What did this mean?

Felicia and In-gong looked at each other while the sword duke laughed.

"Is this your first time exploring ruins? If an expedition comes, you can't swallow everything."

"Uh... Sword Duke?"

Were they hearing properly right now?

In-gong had a bemused expression on his face while Felicia was in a stupor.

The sword duke clicked his tongue and continued to talk,

"You have suffered in a fortress of this magnitude, yet you want to give it to the Demon King's Palace? You should take care of it properly. Anyway, the treasures will just go somewhere else after being received by the Demon King's Palace. So, just call the expedition after you have collected everything. The Demon King did the same when he was a prince. Why shouldn't Prince and Princess do this?"

He winked lightly at the end.

Now, In-gong started to feel disoriented.

However, the sword duke didn't care about In-gong's and Felicia's reactions and pointed to a distant place.

"In particular, the body of that black dragon. Take it. It will be useful in many ways. It will be nice if it is broken down into three.

At that moment, something flashed in In-gong's head. Felicia exclaimed,

"Wait, wait a minute. Into three?"



Dividing into three? Was that right?

"Payment for travel expenses. Isn't that right?"

The sword duke said with a pleased grin while In-gong and Felicia had the same expression on their faces.

The sword duke took Carack and Karma to the body of the black dragon, Partizan. It was in order to disassemble Partizan's body.

Rather than following the sword duke, In-gong grabbed Felicia's hand.

"Noona, please wait as I have something to say."

Felicia turned back to In-gong and nodded. Once the sword duke's group was a sufficient distance away, she spoke first.

"Is it about the magic that puts things away in another space?"

As expected, she was a great magician. She had only seen it a few times in today's battle, but she had already grasped the situation.

In-gong nodded slowly.

"That's right. It is about that."

In-gong kept many of his skills a secret as much as possible...

His inventory ability was very convenient. Depending on the way it was used, it was a really powerful ability.

It was better if few people knew about these capabilities. Just like all secrets in the world, the ability of the inventory could only be exercised when kept secret.

However, In-gong decided to tell Felicia the secret of the inventory. He couldn't keep sneaking items into his space forever. The ease of use of Earth Quaker and White Eagle were also included in his consideration.

Felicia was a reliable ally. It would be beneficial to disclose the secret of his inventory and it wouldn't harm him.

Felicia glanced at In-gong. He was like an onion as he was always giving her new surprises.

"Did you learn it all of a sudden?"

"No, it is a magic that I inherently have."

"Can you teach me?"

"I'm sorry, that is impossible. This isn't the type of magic that can be taught."

This wasn't a lie. Felicia stared into In-gong's eyes for a moment before nodding.

"Well, I understand. It hasn't been a long time since we've become friends. I will keep it a secret."

"Thank you."

Felicia didn't reply. She just approached In-gong closely.

"Excuse me, what is it?"

"Do Caitlin and Chris know?"

In-gong rolled his eyes while Felicia covered her face with a fan.

He refrained from laughing and answered,

"No, the two of them don't know yet."

"Really?"

Felicia's voice was cheerful. She looked so cute that In-gong could barely hold back his laughter.

"Anyway, Noona. Should I reveal the magic to the sword duke?"

There were many items, not including the black dragon's body. At first glance, it seemed like a special magic bag, but he wondered if such a lie would get past the sword duke. They had a good relationship, so he didn't want to spoil it by lying.

After In-gong's question, Felicia stared at the sword duke and shook her head.

"Will he even care?"

"I was thinking the same thing."

They had only spent a short time together, but it was enough to understand the sword duke's personality.

And a few minutes later, the sword duke responded exactly as expected.

"Use it comfortably. I also have a similar tool."

That was the end. As they disassembled the body of the black dragon, the sword duke pointed to it and asked,

"Prince and Princess, what are you going to do with it?"

There was damage after it became a zombie dragon, but there were still many parts that could be used.

In-gong glanced at his Dragon Scale Greaves and replied,

"I going to use it in the smithy at the Demon King's Palace."

"Princess?"

"Me too."

It was natural. The most outstanding blacksmiths that In-gong and Felicia knew were at the Demon King's Palace.

However, the sword duke looked displeased.

"Hmm, the blacksmiths at the Demon King's Palace are very good, but such good materials are a waste for the Demon King's Palace. So, why don't you meet my friend?"

"Someone you know?"

Felicia's eyes shone. The sword duke liked the response and continued,

"Yes, my interest is deepening, so tell us.

Who is it?"

In-gong was also excited. A friend of the strongest swordsman, the Sword Duke. He didn't know the name, but he was already looking forward to it.

The sword duke nodded.

"Wait a minute. It isn't good to be too excited. Do Prince and Princess know the name Amita?"

Felicia nodded while neither Carack or Karma replied.

However, In-gong was different.

His eyes widened and he cried out,

"Amita! Amita Ignasia!"

Of course, he knew it. It was a name that he had to know.

The meeting with Amita had been a hidden event in Knight Saga!

Amita Ignasia...

The best blacksmith in the Demon World who handled the last flame!

The sword duke's description followed.

# Chapter 73

## Sword Duke #4

"It is obvious, but they are a blacksmith. 9th Prince, how much do you know about Amita?"

The sword duke asked, stroking his beard. Fortunately, the question seemed to source from pure curiosity, rather than any doubts. It made sense to In-gong.

He had said Amita's first and last name. He had been so excited that he made a small mistake.

Instead of revealing his agitation, In-gong's face showed only excitement.

"I heard a story related to them when I was a child. The legend of the blacksmith who handles the last spark of fire. I didn't think they were a person who actually existed."

Amita was sometimes a man and sometimes a woman. Due to the freely changing gender and age, there was a story that Amita was a clan or group who shared a name, not an individual.

In-gong also didn't know the identity of Amita. There had been a theory among Knight Saga fanatics that Amita was a polymorph dragon, but that was just a guess.

'Maybe they are like Green Wind.'

Anyway, it was clear that Amita was the best blacksmith in the Demon World that dealt with the last flame.

The last flame meant the first fire that had appeared when the world was created. Despite being the first flame, it was called the last flame due to a prophecy.

The world would be destroyed when the last flame went out.

The first and last flame...

An existence that started and ended with the world.

The last flame was a myth. Therefore, all weapons made with the last flame retained its own divinity despite not being blessed with the sacred symbol of a god.

Meeting Amita in Knight Saga literally depended on luck. The place and time where Amita emerged was completely random.

Despite clearing Knight Saga 10 times, In-gong had only managed to meet Amita three times.

Amita was a person who was difficult to meet.

The meeting itself was good since they were called the Demon World's best blacksmith.

In-gong didn't explain all of this. After briefly mentioning the last flame, he finished by saying that Amita was a legendary blacksmith who could handle the last flame.

'This is information from Knight Saga's manual.'

The sword duke nodded slowly at In-gong's words.

"Prince is correct. Amita is the blacksmith who deals with the last flame. They aren't a legend or superstition but a real person."

The sword duke looked at Felicia and explained the last flame in more detail. In-gong already knew all of this.

The explanation was of great interest to Felicia since she was a capable ruins explorer. However, it wasn't the last flame or Amita that she was interested in.

"Shutra, where did you hear this story? Isn't the library still not available to you?"

Even Felicia was hearing about the story of the last flame for the first time. So, where had In-gong heard about the legend?

In-gong had also known about the Thunder Light Anvil, so he must have a lot of

archaeology knowledge.

In-gong laughed awkwardly and said,

"Uh... It is just a story I heard as a child."

His voice was awkward because it was an improvised excuse, but Felicia accepted it.

"Ah, 5th Queen... Sorry, Shutra."

Felicia's brow furrowed as she made a really sorry expression.

The 5th Queen Semita Ignus...

The only one among the demon king's queens who had died and who was Shutra's mother.

In-gong quickly scratched his head.

"No, it is okay. It is all in the past."

Felicia's misunderstanding made it easy to pass over the issue, but he still didn't feel comfortable.

Carack saw In-gong's expression and returned to the topic.

"Umm, so the person called Amita is the best blacksmith in the Demon World and is Sword Duke's friend."

"It is really great."

Karma, who had been keeping her mouth shut, cried out in a lively voice. It was a type of courage to try and change the atmosphere.

Thanks to his two faithful subordinates, In-gong could laugh and agree with Karma's words.

The legendary swordsman was friends with the best blacksmith of the Demon World. Indeed, legends played with other legends.

The sword duke patted Karma's head and lifted the sword hanging from his waist.

"That person is the one who made this sword. They also made the demon king's sword."

The outward appearance of the sword duke's sword was very plain. There were no patterns or decorations on the sheath and only a red cord was wrapped around the handle of the sword.

However, no one here could think of the sword duke's sword as ordinary. It had been made by the best blacksmith in the Demon World.

Moreover, the sword duke said that the demon king's sword had also been made by the same person.

The demon king's sword. Despite all the weapons that could be obtained travelling around the Demon World, it was the best sword with the highest damage.

Additionally, In-gong knew of one more of Amita's works.

The strongest weapon in Knight Saga, even surpassing the demon king's sword...

The Warrior's Sword.

It was one of the elder dragons, Guardian Queian, who had prepared the materials for the sword and imbued it with all types of powerful magic, but Amita had been the one who made the sword.

In-gong's chest started throbbing. So, the meeting with Amita was very anticipated.

Felicia, Carack and Karma also contained their excitement as they swallowed their saliva. They were confident of Amita's abilities after hearing that they had made the demon king's sword.

"They like to be cooped up in isolation. They also don't like meeting people, but if you give my name, Amita will meet you once. Whether or not they will take the job depends on Prince's and Princess' capabilities."



The sword duke grinned and stepped back. It meant that he wouldn't really meddle in this matter.

They could travel to meet the best blacksmith in the Demon World only to be turned away.

However, Felicia just smiled peacefully.

"Well, Shutra will manage to pull it off somehow. I'll just sneak in with him."

"Right, if it is Prince, then he can somehow do it."

'I think so as well, Master.'

"I believe in His Highness."

Carack, Green Wind and Karma agreed in turn.

There was no basis for this belief, but the faces of the four people were filled with faith. In fact, In-gong wasn't much different from the four.

'It will work out somehow.'

Because he was the protagonist.

He joked inwardly. Looking back on what had happened so far, there had been many unexpected incidents. He wasn't thinking of just leaving after meeting Amita.

There was no need to panic so early.

'If it was impossible from the beginning, the sword duke wouldn't have mentioned it.'

Moreover, it had only been three times, but Amita had made something for In-gong in Knight Saga. He knew roughly what to do to convince Amita to take the job.

The sword duke laughed in amazement at Felicia's, Carack's and Karma's infinite trust in In-gong and said,

"I'll let you know where that person has been lately. You should go as soon as possible

since you never know when Amita may move to another place.”

It made a lot of sense. In Knight Saga, Amita never stayed long in one place and roamed the world.

"But don't worry too much. They should be staying in this place for another half a year."

In-gong sighed in relief at the sword duke's further explanation. On the other hand, Felicia was still worried and stepped closer to the sword duke.

"Sword Duke, will we be able to meet Amita on the way back to the Demon King's Palace?"

"Don't you think you should report back first?"

"Hehehe."

Felicia laughed awkwardly. It was too far from Felicia's usual self that she looked awkward.

'But she is still cute.'

In-gong sneaked a peek at the sword duke. The sword duke burst into laughter after seeing Felicia's actions.

"That's good. I can't help but listen since you are so different from your normal self."

Felicia's face reddened. The sword duke patted Felicia's head once before turning his attention to In-gong.

"If you go back this time, you'll probably get more attention than before. So, it is better to meet Amita before returning."

It was the reason for Felicia's uncharacteristic actions.

"I will create a proper mission to investigate the ruins. You will join in order to support me. It might sound strange but you will help the sword duke."

The series of events at Thunderdoom Fortress weren't light. In-gong and Felicia didn't need to report directly when they returned to the Demon King's Palace, so the palace couldn't say otherwise if they went off on another mission.

However, it was a different story if they were going with the sword duke. In-gong and Felicia's new mission was likely to look like a secret mission.

There was also the organization aiming for Zephyr. If it hadn't been for the sword duke, the party might have been annihilated.

However, there was no way they could hide in the Demon King's Palace.

Moreover, this was the Demon World. These type of threats weren't unheard of. In the first place, the children of the demon king were given missions.

In-gong stared at the sword duke once again. Not only had he saved their lives from the man with the spear, he had also handed In-gong a new S rank technique. That alone made him thankful, but he was now giving him the location of Amita. In-gong was sincerely grateful to the sword duke.

"Thank you, Sword Duke."

"Prince has caught my interest. It isn't common, so I am doing some unusual things."

The sword duke seemed like a friendly neighbourhood grandfather, but that wasn't the case for everyone.

In the past, the man called the sword duke hadn't been kind at all.

"Anyhow, it seems like we have talked about everything necessary. You look tired, so why don't we take a break? Have a bath and a meal."

Felicia and Karma's eyes lit up at the sword duke's proposal. Compared to a meal, the two of them wanted to take a bath.

They had the control room, so it wouldn't be difficult to find a place to rest.

Moreover, Delia had been left in the control room. She was a good example of an aide, so she had likely secured such places already.

"I will take care of disassembling the body of the black dragon. Don't worry about it."

The sword duke winked as he pointed his sword to the black dragon. In-gong and Felicia nodded.

"I understand. I will do as you say."

They were curious about the process of disassembling the dragon, but they were exhausted.

The group left the sword duke and rushed to the control room.

In-gong woke up a staggering 14 hours later.

After the bath and a good night's sleep, Felicia was dressed in the typical outfit of a dark elf.

"The fortress attack is virtually over."

The control room was in their hands, so they didn't have to worry about any more traps. The dungeon guardians were also under In-gong's control and were no longer enemies.

The sword duke appeared with a relaxed face and led the party to the disassembled dragon. The leather, bones, teeth and feet were divided exactly into three parts.

In-gong placed his share, as well as Felicia's, into the inventory and got to work. It was always fun collecting loot.

Thanks to his foresight in informing the sword duke, there was no need to hide his inventory. Daphne was asked to wait in the control room as In-gong literally started removing things from Thunderdoom Fortress.

Felicia started discouraging In-gong from where she was watching.

"I don't know the limit of your inventory magic, but... we should leave a moderate

amount behind. Otherwise, the palace will have some doubts.”

Under Felicia’s advice, In-gong decided to keep it to an appropriate amount.

He didn’t touch the armour that the dead dwarves were wearing or anything below a certain level in the warehouses.

The concept for this work was ‘concession.’

The treasures in the treasure halls weren’t shrunk as each person only took one box.

In-gong also gave Green Wind a box as she directed him to the things that she wanted.

Most of the treasures were gold coins engraved with the hammer and lighting that was the symbol of the Dwarf Kingdom.

After many hours passed...

The party returned for Daphne in the control room and finally went to the records room.

It contained numerous records of the Dwarf Kingdom, so Carack looked like a husband dragged by his wife to the department store.

However, Felicia and Delia were different. They started looking at the various records with greedy eyes that were exactly the same as when they had encountered the Thunder Light Anvil.

Karma also enjoyed the records, but her expression soon became the same as Carack. It was because all the records were in dwarven language.

In-gong stepped forward. Bookshelves and shelves filled the large room, so the records would take days to go through.

Among them, something drew in In-gong’s eye.

There was no special reason. He just felt something.

It was at one end of the room, in a place so old that the record was stored as a slab, not

a book.

In-gong pulled at one of the stacks. It had protection and weight reduction magic on it, so the slab was very light despite being 50cm in length and width.

A picture was drawn on the slab.

It was a picture in which two different groups were symmetrical to each other.

There were six dragons located on the right side. Four people were located on the left.

Despite it being a slab, the engraved picture was very elaborate. In-gong instantly recognized two of the six dragons.

The Great Enkidu and Watcher Ainkel. They were the six elder dragons.

In-gong swallowed his saliva inadvertently. He also found a familiar face in the group that was opposite the elder dragons.

The golden-crowned female with white hair...

She stood at the forefront of the people.

# Chapter 74

## Sword Duke #5

The voice of the woman he had heard every time he used the power of Conquest...

The beautiful woman who emerged in his head in every moment of crisis.

It was only a cold, grey slab, but In-gong naturally coloured in the picture engraved on the slab.

A golden crown, white hair, mysterious red and blue eyes.

Conquest.

That was her name. She wore pure white clothes and led the group.

"War."

He looked at someone behind the white woman and was naturally able to recall the colour.

If the woman wearing the crown was pure white, the woman in armour was crimson.

The woman surrounded by flames was wearing red, blood-like armour. Her eyes were thick and dark blue. They were eyes that reminded him of the sword duke.

Additionally, there were two men behind the women.

One was blue and the other was black. Unlike the previous two women, he couldn't recall them in his head.

Four people.

Ainkel had called In-gong a Conquest Knight. If so, did the power of Conquest come from these four people, particularly the white woman?

In-gong's eyes rolled as he thought. The four people had been drawn exactly opposite the elder dragons.

Why were they a mirror image? Did the four people and the elder dragons have a hostile relationship with each other?

The elder dragons were said to have godlike powers.

The four people were opposite them... This might mean the four people were god-like beings comparable to the elder dragons.

'Watcher Ainkel.'

In-gong had only faced her for a short time. He had merely heard her voice emerge from Green Wind's mouth.

However, In-gong hadn't felt like she was an enemy. After conquering Green Wind and taking Ainkel's dragon heart, instead of thinking of her as an enemy, he felt closer to her.

Why?

Didn't the four people have a hostile relationship with the elder dragons?

Or did the composition of the picture mean something else?

In-gong tried to find any new clues in the slab, but the slab didn't have any writing around the picture. He looked at other slabs nearby but couldn't find anything related.

Conquest Knight...

Conquest and War...

The identity of the remaining two were unknown.

However, their relationship with the elder dragons...

Why did they have a record stored in Thunderdoom Fortress?



In-gong looked back at the white woman. She had a very determined and calm face. He had never seen a different expression on the white woman.

In-gong glanced at the picture one last time before putting it back where it had been originally. He wanted to take it but couldn't put it in his inventory due to the special protection magic around the archives.

At that time, he heard a whisper from Green Wind,

'Master, can you come over here? I have done something worthy of praise. Look quickly.'

There was a lot of excitement in her voice.

It was a cute child-like voice that bounced continuously.

In-gong smiled involuntarily and turned in the direction of her voice.

"What's going on?"

'I found a record for the elder dragons. The dwarves in this fortress seem to be really interested in dragons.'

Green Wind swung her arms while she sat on White Eagle. She was translucent like a ghost, but her smile was vivid.

'This way, this way.'

Instead of a slab, a large book was waiting for In-gong. There was a stand that the book was placed on, but the stand was made for a dwarf, so it was a little uncomfortable to use.

In-gong solved the problem by sitting on White Eagle and Green Wind sat next to him, urging In-gong on again.

'There is some related content here.'

She had been born from the fragment of Ainkel, so she could also read the dwarf

characters. In-gong read the letters, that Green Wind was pointing at, slowly.

'Violent Kaltein.'

An elder dragon with the power of fire.

'Isn't this useful information?'

He had just read the first line when Green Wind knocked against his side and asked, Instead of looking at Green Wind's face, In-gong pulled back and looked behind her.

'Master?'

"No, you don't have a tail."

If she did, it would be wagging wildly.

'I don't know what Master is talking about.'

Green Wind sounded puzzled, but In-gong just patted her head.

"Well done. I think it will help."

'Is that so? Then just read it. I will enjoy the praise after a while. Instead, I'll ask for the praise to last a little longer.'

Her smiling face was really pleased. It wasn't merely about the praise but because she had been helpful to In-gong.

In-gong patted her head a few more times before focusing on the contents of the book. It was a legend about the residence of Violent Kaltein.

The elder dragons had aliases that matched their characters.

Enkidu was the tyrant with the power of destruction.

Ainkel was the gentle mother and compassionate to all, while Queian was the wise and thoughtful sage.

Violent Kaltein was the warrior.

He was remembered as a hot dragon due to his 'violence', but he was closer to ice than to fire. Kaltein wasn't easily rattled and he looked at everything with calm eyes.

A cold flame.

A silent warrior who didn't pull out his sword easily, but once he did, the world would burn with his intensity.

Like the other elder dragons, he was missing. The information in the book was about an old lair that Kaltein had stayed in hundreds of years ago.

'The book itself was created hundreds of years ago... So, it has been almost a thousand years?'

Suddenly, Ainkel's death popped into his head. She had lost her life a thousand years ago. Ainkel's death... The elder dragons disappearing from the world.

In-gong stopped those thoughts and focused on the book again. It was a map from hundreds of years ago, but he could instantly tell where the map was pointing to when he saw it.

'It isn't far.'

It was very far from where In-gong's party was, but it was near to where they were going.

It was the place where Amita, the best blacksmith in the Demon World, was staying.

According to the sword duke, Amita was staying near Spider Forest. Spider Forest was close to the land of the lycanthropes while Kaltein's old lair was at Sun Lake, to the north of Spider Forest.

An elder dragon with the fire attribute had his lair at a lake. Numerous Knight Saga fanatics had searched for Kaltein's lair and hadn't found anything.

'It seems like this journey will be a set of destinations.'

After the work with Amita, he was going to meet Chris and Caitlin but he now added Kaltein's lair as another destination.

If the journey went as planned, he could expect a nice upgrade in terms of equipment.

'Have you read everything? Master, what do you think?'

Green Wind asked, having run out of patience. Instead of saying anything, In-gong just kept on stroking Green Wind's head.

In-gong's group stayed at Thunderdoom Fortress for four days.

After they finished going through the armoury and treasures, Felicia started exploring Thunderdoom Fortress as a ruins explorer, not a treasure hunter.

In-gong spent half the day in the archives and the other half in an empty room training. He had wanted to learn a few more things from the sword duke, but the sword duke left the fortress.

'I will meet Prince again after you return to the Demon King's Palace. I look forward to Prince being much stronger than you are now.'

It was a farewell that contained a lot of burden.

Unfortunately, he couldn't find any more information on the elder dragons in the archives. It was the same for the four people, including the white woman.

If there was one consolation, it was Carack's growth.

The King's Knights was one of Conquest's skills. Call was the only part of The King's Knights.

"How is it? Don't you think that you've become a little stronger?"

In-gong asked Carack with a voice filled with expectations. It was shortly after using Upgrade for the first time.

## The King's Knights- Upgrade.

It was appropriate compensation for something who achieved merits for the king. His position became higher and the power of the king could give him more strength.

Carack had achieved many merits after becoming In-gong's knight and had already gathered enough merits for an upgrade. Carack, who had upgraded from a soldier to leader of the soldiers, looked at himself slowly. He punched his chest lightly before saying,

"It was worth all that hard work."

His strength had increased. In particular, his mood had improved significantly. Even though he struck his chest, he never felt sick.

That wasn't the only effect. Carack didn't know yet, but his resistance to various attributes, including fire, had increased greatly. He also had a stronger resistance to poison which meant he could now endure a light poison.

'Indeed, the king's shield.'

Once Call was used, he would become In-gong's shield, so In-gong nodded with satisfaction.

"Please keep working hard in the future."

Carack made a strange expression after In-gong's encouragement, but it was only for a short moment. Within seconds, he smiled and tapped the newly received dwarven magic shield.

Karma looked on with envy as she formed fists and declared.

"I'll work hard as well."

If Carack was his shield, then Karma was his shuttle. She was like a moving vehicle for others who weren't In-gong, but it was still useful.

Looking at Karma's shining eyes, In-gong was reminded of Caitlin.

‘Won’t she be amazed?’

In-gong’s current strength was no comparison to what it had been when he had last seen her. Caitlin would be greatly surprised at his appearance.

Once he was in the land of the lycanthropes, he was thinking of sparring against Caitlin. Even if he didn’t use Earth Quaker and White Eagle, In-gong felt like he could do fairly well against Caitlin.

‘Will she freak out if she knows about Divine Sura Authority?’

He was looking forward to Caitlin’s and Chris’ reactions.

The next morning...

After Felicia confirmed that the party from the Demon King’s Palace had arrived at the nearby village, In-gong’s group left Thunderdoom Fortress.

Felicia stared at Thunderdoom Fortress with eyes that were just as sad as when she had to leave the Thunder Light Anvil, but it was unavoidable. Although the sword duke had said it would be okay for at least half a year, she couldn’t rest assured after knowing about Amita’s wanderlust. It was better to hurry as much as possible.

Then three days after In-gong’s party had departed from the Thunderdoom Fortress, a new person arrived in order to lead the fortress exploration.

It was the 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros.

The fact that General Kashubal’s death had been a trap to lure Zephyr had been reported to the Demon King’s Palace.

The draconians, who occupied prestigious positions in the palace, were furious that their prince was targeted, but Zephyr remained calm.

He chose the Thunderdoom Fortress exploration mission, but the demon king, Mitra, did not show any signs of interest.

There were many stories about Zephyr. There were those who called Zephyr arrogant and provocative while others praised the 2nd Prince.

Zephyr behaved as usual after he arrived at Thunderdoom Fortress. He examined the remnants of the shadow puppets, reviewed the progress of Thunderdoom's exploration and, after completing various office work, looked at the traces of fighting.

He carefully examined the place where the man with the spear had self-destructed, then he visited the armoury, treasure rooms and archives.

Zephyr entered the records room alone and didn't look at the list of information logged by Felicia. Despite it being his first visit, he moved forward without any hesitation.

A strong attraction that couldn't be defined led Zephyr to one area.

Just like In-gong, Zephyr stood in front of a pile of slabs. He also pulled out the same stone slab that In-gong had chosen.

The picture of the six elder dragons and four people.

Zephyr knew three of the people.

There was only one face that he didn't know.

The woman wearing a crown at the forefront.

Zephyr's eyes narrowed as he turned his gaze towards the three people he already knew.

War, Famine and Death...

And the six elder dragons who were hostile to them.

The forgotten myths and legends. It was a picture from a long time past... a thousand years ago.

The crowned woman caught Zephyr's eyes once again before he put the slab back where it had been. Rather than searching for other records, he recalled the feeling he

had sensed at the central plaza.

The aura of death that remained in the place where the man with the spear had self-destructed.

Zephyr slowly closed his eyes.

That line that had once been broken was continuing again.



# Chapter 75

## Legend

After leaving Thunderdoom Fortress, they moved along the mountain range, toward the northwest.

It wasn't easy to find monsters, beasts or people in the forests near the lycanthrope territory.

On the third day of moving by carriage:

After finishing the camping arrangements, In-gong stood topless in the middle of a clearing. His special training was starting.

"Okay, here goes."

In-gong breathed quickly and cast a spell.

"Fire Arrow!"

A fire arrow emerged from his fingertips!

However, the direction it went in was strange. Instead of heading in front of him, the arrow aimed for In-gong's chest. It was because In-gong had pointed to himself when he cast the spell.

Paha!

The fire arrow exploded as it hit In-gong's chest. He quickly prepared the next spell. This time it was a recovery spell.

"Heal!"

He treated his chest with the white light around his right hand. The pain settled and there was a strange feeling of relief and pleasure around his chest.

...A newly developed masochistic tendency.

He attacked himself with magic and healed with recovery magic. It was a training method that raised Fire Arrow and Heal at the same time. However, that wasn't the only effect.

'Oh, it's rising. My Magic Power Control skill is increasing. My durability stat has also risen a little bit!'

It was necessary to adjust the power so that he avoided a critical hit. Doing this continuously increased Magic Power Control.

This training raised the mastery of attack and recovery magic as well as the control of magic power. It was truly a fantastic training.

However, that didn't mean there were no side effects.

"Tsu tsu... Doing it that way... it is a little perverted..."

'Master is too scary. He keeps smiling after being hit. He seems to be enjoying it. I like Master, but this is slightly disgusting.'

Carack's pitying eyes and Green Wind's gloomy gaze struck his chest.

Moreover, it wasn't just the two of them.

"It is the first time I've seen training like this."

Felicia sighed with a face indicating that she had given up. She wanted to tell him to stop but didn't think it was worth it.

Carack asked Felicia,

"Princess, is that really okay? What if he gets a deep-rooted illness?"

The human body wasn't cast iron. If someone hit it ignorantly, it was more likely to break, than to strengthen.

In the Demon World, it was possible that some species existed that did such ignorant training.

However, Carack had some common sense. Right now, it might seem like the body was becoming stronger but the person would suffer when older.

Felicia sighed and shook her head at Carack's worried question.

"Surprisingly, it is normal. As Shutra said, his magic skills are increasing. I think it is something that he learnt from Divine Sura Authority. Daphne, don't you think so?"

"Yes, it really is amazing. 9th Prince's body is extremely healthy."

Two people with recovery magic were telling him this, so Carack couldn't say anything.

Felicia sighed again.

"But looking at it is so strange that I find it hard to hold my tongue. He is lucky."

"No one would believe me if I told them this."

Daphne laughed awkwardly.

Felicia frowned and glanced at In-gong. The fire arrow was exploding again.

"Ohhh!"

In-gong suddenly cried out with joy. It was because the level of Fire Arrow had risen.

However, the other people didn't know about the skill level and just thought he was mad.

Karma clasped her hands together and prayed,

"Green Wind, please keep an eye on His Highness."

'Ummm.'

Green Wind, who was the object of the prayer, looked at In-gong with an embarrassed

face while Carack clicked his tongue. Instead of praying to Green Wind, he shouted at In-gong,

"Prince! It is time to eat! Eat moderately! You need to eat to live!"

In-gong nodded after hearing Carack's call. Laughing pleasantly, he put on his top.

"This is our current location. So, tomorrow, we will arrive in the territory of the lycanthropes."

After a simple meal, the group gathered around a map on the ground. The sky had darkened, but there was no inconvenience due to the light spirit that Daphne summoned.

Felicia gazed at where In-gong was pointing and laughed.

"It is still amazing every time I see it."

"What?"

"Right now, the stars haven't risen yet. It is amazing that you can know our current location."

In-gong's map-related ability was enough to be called amazing. As the group stared at In-gong, he laughed awkwardly and said,

"I can't explain it... I just know?"

He couldn't say that he saw it on the mini-map.

Carack replied to In-gong with a serious expression,

"Well, this is why I hear that geniuses are unlucky."

"That's right, that's right."

"I agree."

Felicia and Daphne agreed in turn. At first, Carack's behaviour seemed a bit rude, but

they got along well now.

Rather than refute it, In-gong changed the topic.

"Anyway, we will be in the territory of the lycanthropes tomorrow. Are you excited?"

"My heart is pounding. I've never seen a lycanthrope."

Karma exclaimed with shining eyes. Just like Green Wind, she had spent her whole life on the plains, so the journey itself was fun for her.

Felicia stared at Karma with warm eyes and said with a sorry expression,

"I'm sorry, but it's better not to expect too much. Although we are entering the safe zone, it is only the outskirts. There are no important facilities around here."

Meeting Amita was the top priority, so they had to take the shortest path. Like Felicia said, they were entering the lycanthrope territory, but it was only the outskirts. So, the probability of encountering a lycanthrope was low.

Karma seemed crestfallen until In-gong spoke,

"We will go to the lycanthrope palace when we return. We are going to use the transfer formation at the palace."

The transfer formations covered every part of the Demon World, but there weren't transfer formations everywhere. Additionally, the number of formations linked to the Demon King's Palace was limited.

Of course, that wasn't the only reason why they planned to visit the lycanthrope palace.

"I am looking forward to going to the palace."

Felicia said with a small smile. He didn't know all the details yet, but Felicia was originally estranged from Chris. Thus, this was her first visit.

Carack laughed and asked In-gong,

"Prince, do you want to see 7th Prince and 8th Princess?"

"I do."

It wasn't just flattery but true words. In particular, he wanted to see Caitlin.

Carack nodded.

"Hrmm, I want to see Seira. I don't know her well, but... why is everyone looking like that?"

At that moment, the gazes of Delia, Daphne and Karma were unimaginable. Felicia laughed while In-gong raised his hand to Carack's shoulder and said seriously,

"Carack, perhaps you are a protagonist as well?"

"What nonsense is that?"

In-gong didn't bother explaining.

The next morning, the group of people were ready to resume their journey on the carriage. Felicia's horses entered the realm of the lycanthropes but nothing changed. Just as before, it was just a grassland with no humanity.

However, that changed when it was time to enter the forest.

"Stop!"

Their carriage was blocked by two lycanthropes. Karma, who was sitting next to Carack, lit up for a moment, but her shoulders soon slumped. It was because the lycanthropes didn't look very different from humans.

Carack stopped the carriage and looked at the lycanthropes. Then the younger looking soldier shouted threats,

"This road is currently prohibited. Go back!"

A growl was mixed in with his voice, but Carack was calm.

"What's going on?"

"This is an official order from the lycanthrope royalty! So, go back!"

The growl was increasing in volume. Carack scratched his head and looked inside the carriage. In-gong exchanged glances with Felicia before she got off.

"This is the work of the lycanthrope royal family? Perhaps something big is happening?"

The young soldier sniffed at Felicia and stiffened. The older soldier observed Felicia quietly and she ordered,

"I am an officer of the crown. Open the path. I will take responsibility."

The older soldier thought quickly.

The carriage with no coat of arms, the big orc driving the carriage and the only one sitting next to the orc was a satyr...

A female dark elf... Not only did her colourful clothes look expensive, her behaviour and tone were familiar. She had the appearance of a born noble.

There was no sense of wildness. It was obvious that she wasn't an ordinary traveller.

However, the younger soldier wasn't really thinking. He sneered at Felicia and shouted,

"This little bitch is an arrogant one! Don't go overboard! Do you think that you are royalty?!"

"Yes."

"Good words... What?"

"I am."

“You are?”

“Yes.”

Felicia smiled as the young soldier started to sweat.

In-gong’s group followed the lycanthrope soldiers through the depths of the forest toward a clear lot where hundreds of tents were set up.

‘Isn’t this nostalgic?’

He was reminded of the first time he had visited Caitlin’s camp. At that time, there had been yellow tents like this.

‘Wait a minute, yellow tents?’

If In-gong’s memory was correct, the yellow tents definitely belonged to Caitlin. Then was Caitlin here right now?

In-gong turned to Felicia and she made a questioning expression. At that moment, he heard a welcome voice.

“Shutra!”

“Caitlin noona! Chris hyung!”

There was no doubt about it. Chris and Caitlin stood at the entrance of a yellow tent. Both of them seemed surprised by In-gong’s appearance.

In-gong ran to Chris and Caitlin with big steps and both of them opened their arms to welcome him. He hugged Caitlin once and saw Chris’ open arms, but In-gong stepped back instead of hugging him. Chris just chuckled and patted In-gong’s head.

The young soldier was staring at the reunion with a pale face, but no one was paying attention to him. It was because there were many people being ignored.

"Hey, aren't I here as well?"



Felicia asked sharply, covering her mouth with a fan. Chris responded with an indifferent expression.

“Uh, Noonim?”

It was a deliberate mock response. Felicia’s eyes narrowed and Chris laughed. Caitlin got between the two people.

“Unni!”

“Kyak! Hey, wait a minute. Wait a minute!”

Caitlin hugged Felicia tightly. Caitlin usually had a modest attitude in other places, but right now, this was the territory of the lycanthropes. Moreover, they were among those who knew what Caitlin was like.

While this was going on, Carack was warmly greeted by Seira under the glares of Delia, Karma and Daphne.

“Anyway, let’s go inside.”

Chris said, raising a hand to In-gong’s shoulder. Seira led Carack, Delia and the others over to the lycanthropes. In-gong and Felicia were the only ones who entered the tent.

Felicia flopped down on a chair made of tiger leather and asked,

“What are both of you doing here? Traffic is banned. Did a prisoner escape?”

It wasn’t strange that Chris and Caitlin were together, but the both of them being in this place was unusual.

Chris sat down opposite to Felicia and shrugged.

“Well, something like that. However, what are the two of you doing? I kept on hearing that Shutra’s turning the Demon King’s Palace upside down.”

“Great.”

Caitlin spoke shortly as she sat down next to Chris. Indeed, she had the original shining eyes.

Felicia laughed at the two of them and spoke while crossing her legs,

"Do you want to hear an even more surprising story? Isn't that right, Shutra?"

All eyes turned to In-gong. In-gong faced a challenge as he stared at Caitlin's and Chris' curious expressions.

What should he tell them?

In-gong chose the most amazing topic to tell the two people.

"We met the sword duke."

Even though it wasn't the court gathering, exclamations burst out.

# Chapter 76

## Legend #2

"So, to recap, the sword duke came to Thunderdoom to meet Shutra, right? His purpose was to teach you a few things."

Chris summed it up with a disbelieving expression. It was unlike his usual expression, so he was really shocked.

In-gong replied in a calm voice in order to pacify Chris,

"Yes, I'm alive thanks to him. It was really a crisis."

In-gong not only explained what had happened at Thunderdoom Fortress but at Enger Plains as well. Apart from the sword duke, it was also important to talk about the mysteries they had encountered at Thunderdoom Fortress.

Chris thought about In-gong's explanation as he leaned back in his chair. After a while, he took a deep breath and leaned forward.

"My mind is all muddled. The events that occurred in Thunderdoom Fortress is definitely serious... The mention of the sword duke keeps bothering me."

Apart from the demon king, he was the strongest in the Demon King's Palace.

He was an elder of the sura and the strongest swordsman of the previous era. Living in seclusion, the sword duke was rarely seen at the Demon King's Palace.

However, no one in the Demon King's Palace could ignore the sword duke as the Demon World respected the strong. The sword duke had the absolute power required to reverse a situation and the number of people who still followed him couldn't be counted.

Yet he had moved and it had only been to meet In-gong.

What was the sword duke thinking? Why had he intervened?

If the sword duke actively supported In-gong for the throne, In-gong would become equal to the other three factions.

'I've never seen this before.'

Chris swallowed his words because he couldn't say them.

Unlike Chris, who was making prideful calculations in his head, Caitlin was as pure as ever. She focused on In-gong's body instead of the political ramifications of the sword duke's actions.

"You don't have any injuries? It was a really dangerous opponent."

Caitlin scanned In-gong and Felicia's body. In-gong smiled brightly at the sweet concern in her eyes.

"I'm fine. The sword duke showed up before anything happened."

"That's right, that's right. Really exquisite timing. Doesn't it seem like he was waiting outside and deliberately appeared at that time?"

Felicia chimed in brighter than usual in order to reassure Caitlin.

It was enough to replace the worry in Caitlin's eyes with curiosity. She asked In-gong and Felicia,

"Was the zombie dragon big?"

"Huge."

"And Shutra caught the big fish with one strike."

Felicia laughed as she punched the air. Caitlin's eyes started sparkling.

"Amazing."

She started visualizing In-gong killing a zombie dragon in her head. Chris hugged

Caitlin's shoulders and laughed.

"You are now a dragon slayer. Isn't that amazing?"

"It is thanks to Ascalon. The dungeon guardians were also on our side."

In-gong replied modestly but his face looked pleased. In-gong was also a person, so he didn't hate praise like this. Moreover, even In-gong thought it was great.

Then Chris' expression suddenly changed. He leaned back in his chair again and stared into In-gong's eyes.

"What is it?"

He asked Chris, who simply shrugged.

"No, doesn't it feel like you are a man driving a storm? There is a blast everywhere you go."

At the Jishuka Mountains, the Demon King's Palace, Enger Plains, the Demon King's Palace again and the Thunderdoom Fortress...

As Carack had pointed out earlier, In-gong got caught up in a big event wherever he went.

Chris said playfully,

"This is suddenly making me nervous. What if something occurs here as well?"

"Oppa."

Caitlin rebuked Chris. Chris shook and knocked against Caitlin's shoulder.

"It's a joke, a joke."

'I really hope it ends as a joke. If Carack was here, he would have said that he feels something ominous.'

Green Wind's voice buzzed in his ears. In-gong turned his head and saw Green Wind

in her translucent state. She had been following Carack's group, but it seemed like she had just returned.

"What is Carack's group doing?"

In-gong asked and a subtle expression crossed Green Wind's face.

'They are chatting and smiling with each other, but the atmosphere is strangely bloody. So, I decided to come here.'

Indeed, Carack.

Maybe he really was a protagonist. He was insensitive to things like this.

Then Caitlin asked In-gong with an anxious voice,

"Shutra?"

"Oh, Green Wind wanted to talk to me."

In-gong pointed to the place where Green Wind was standing.

"Are you referring to the guardian of Enger Plains? Can we see her?"

"I want to see her as well."

"Me too."

After Caitlin, Chris and Felicia also expressed their desire to see Green Wind...

"Greenie?"

'I told you not to call me Greenie. I dislike Master who keeps ignoring my words.'

Green Wind's face was sulky as she spoke to In-gong. In-gong called out Green Wind's name,

"Green Wind."

‘Bah!’

Green Wind snorted but obeyed. She appeared in front of him.

“Wah.”

"The guardian of Enger Plains."

Like In-gong, Chis and Caitlin had carried out the casios subjugation mission previously. Caitlin was excited about the fact that she was looking at the guardian, but Chris had more thoughts.

‘He gained the support of the centaurs.’

Green Wind was the guardian of the centaurs. It was clear that the centaurs, including Ferocious Eyes, would support In-gong due to Green Wind.

He wasn’t the Scrap Prince anymore.

In addition to his skills, the environment was changing.

The demon king’s interest, the sponsorship of the sword duke and the patronage of the guardian... Although it was still weak, he had the support of some interesting forces.

Chris added the power of the lycanthropes as well.

‘And... ’

Chris’ gaze headed toward Felicia. Felicia’s red eyes stared at Chris like she had noticed his gaze.

They had a short exchange, then the two of them looked back at Green Wind after hearing Caitlin’s voice.

It was because Green Wind had disappeared.

“She is shy.”

‘It’s not like that.’

Green Wind retorted as always before In-gong looked at Chris. Chris shrugged and replied,

“Anyway... the mysterious forces... It isn’t unusual if they influenced the Red Lightning tribe’s rebellion like Shutra said. It is likely to continue in the future.”

More than anything, he was concerned about the man who self-destructed in front of the sword duke.

That type of strong person who had chosen to self-destruct without any hesitation... Did that mean he was from a thorough organization or that a strong person like that was common?

"Well, it seems inevitable. This is the Demon World."

His words were similar to the sword duke’s.

There was always someone in the Demon World who tried to challenge the Demon King’s Palace. As the children of the demon king, it was inevitable they would encounter such forces.

Thus, Chris didn’t drag out the story of the unknown force for long. Rather, he was interested in something else.

"The demon king and the sword duke... Knowing Silvan, he will make a big fuss."

A pleased expression formed on his face just by imagining it. He didn’t attach a suffix like when he called Felicia ‘noonim’ and after recalling Caitlin’s words, In-gong could guess at the relationship between Silvan and Chris.

Felicia sighed and said,

"Silvan uses a sword. He has always wanted to learn from the sword duke."

However, that hadn’t happened.

Now, the sword duke had approached In-gong and had been the one who suggested



teaching him.

"Hmm, then the sword duke is Shutra's guardian?"

Chris scratched his chin at Felicia's question and she replied,

"I guess so."

"Why, does Noonim want to be it?"

Felicia flinched and covered her face with her fan. Caitlin focused on In-gong instead of the two people.

"Shutra, what did you learn from the sword duke?"

"I'm curious as well."

Chris quickly turned toward In-gong. Felicia raised her chin and teased,

"Won't everybody be surprised to know?"

Chris' gaze went back to Felicia and she once again hid her face with her fan.

In-gong was still staring at Caitlin as he expressed the idea he had at Thunderdoom Fortress.

"Caitlin noona, do you want to spar with me?"

Caitlin's eyes shone. The sparkle in her eyes was different from the usual admiration. She was obviously excited.

"Okay."

Caitlin rose instantly from her seat.

"I'll concede five hits."

In-gong and Caitlin stood facing each other in the open space. In-gong wanted to conceal the spar, so there was no one around except for Chris and Felicia.

Conceding five hits...

He had seen it in many novels and this saying was personally familiar to In-gong. Caitlin always said this in their previous spars.

Caitlin would stand in one place and receive In-gong's attacks.

'Only five... Shows that I've developed a lot.'

Originally, she had conceded around 20~30 hits. However, In-gong wasn't going to stop at that much.

In-gong had obviously become stronger. The comparison with Villager A was now meaningless.

How strong had he become? In-gong wondered about his level compared to the other children of the demon king, including Caitlin.

'I will do my best.'

He didn't intend to make a fool of himself; Caitlin was going to receive In-gong's power.

'First, I will start with Divine Sura Authority.'

His breathing changed. From the very beginning of the spar, his white aura rose like flames.

Caitlin and Chris flinched back as the white aura burst out like a fierce fire. However, that wasn't the end. In-gong still had methods to enhance his strength.

Protection of the Wind Lv2. It was a spell Green Wind had taught him.

Activation Lv1. That was the basic stage of the spirit magic Daphne had used.

Green Wind wound around In-gong's legs. The wind spirit added to In-gong's strength.

There was still one more.

‘Dragon Blood!’

The power of a dragon humanoid obtained from Watcher Ainkel.

In-gong’s aura surged. Despite not being equipped with Earth Quaker and White Eagle, In-gong’s combat power was greatly enhanced. His aura itself seemed to growl.

In-gong breathed out as he looked at Caitlin and took the posture of Beast Authority. Caitlin also hurriedly took the posture of Beast Authority but her expression was a mess. It was like when she was asked to smash a cliff with her fists.

Why?

Then Felicia hit In-gong’s back.

“Shutra you fool! Are you trying to hurt Caitlin? Do you really want to make her concede in five hits?”

"Caitlin, you don't need to concede anything. Use all your strength."

Chris spoke in a heavy tone. Both eyes were filled with doubt instead of playfulness.

“But...”

Caitlin stared at In-gong and mumbled. In-gong understood how Caitlin felt. Caitlin always strived to keep her word.

In-gong maintained the battle posture and declared in a serious tone.

"I'm also asking you. I want to know my exact level."

It was sincere. He was more interested in confirming his current level than being praised for continued growth.

The man with the spear.

He would have died if the sword duke hadn’t come.

In-gong, Felicia, Carack, Karma, Daphne and Delia would have all died. Maybe even Green Wind would've come to an end.

He had to become stronger. Enough so that he could beat Zephyr!

Caitlin nodded. Instead of saying any more, she revealed her aura.

A dark blue aura.

In-gong's breath poured out. Caitlin formed a fist. Then she sprang forward.

Caitlin was fast. She was like lightning as she moved. But he didn't miss it. Now In-gong could follow Caitlin's movements. He reached out as she charged forward.

Great Mountain.

A technique taught by the sword duke.

It was a huge barrier that could crush Caitlin. Instead of resisting, she adapted to Great Mountain. She flew back and twisted her body in the air. Then she sprang forward the moment she landed.

But the situation was different from before. In-gong was also racing towards her.

Caitlin and In-gong's eyes met. Caitlin's fist headed towards In-gong's head. In-gong moved his upper body and avoided the attack. Like flowing water, In-gong counter-attacked.

Lightning!

As the name suggested, a white flash appeared above Caitlin's head. Instead of confronting it, Caitlin threw her body back and dodged. She rolled on the floor and In-gong's back was exposed to her. Green Wind screamed in his ears.

'Master!'

A dark blue aura was around Caitlin's fist. However, In-gong didn't allow her to strike. This is because the wind had informed him.

The explosive power of Divine Beast Authority and the swiftness of Wind Style.

As Caitlin aimed for him, In-gong twisted his body. In the aftermath, his feet moved as he faced Caitlin again and his fist stretched out.

A fierce battle occurred. In-gong had more strength but Caitlin was faster. The two exchanged over 10 attacks as they used all their power as promised.

It was a situation where they would defend as soon as there was an attack.

In-gong's technique transformed in this situation. Aura exploded in the air as both In-gong and Caitlin had the same idea. This wasn't a minor blow but a powerful one that both sides prepared. Despite the fierce competition, they couldn't help laughing as they struck each other.

Explosive Power!

Blue and white mixed together. There was a huge roar as their eyes were momentarily blinded by light.

The earth churned wildly. In-gong smiled as he withdrew his right arm and Caitlin was the same. Just like a wild prey before assaulting the prey, she smiled brightly.

The second stage began.

The two people once again produced a strong aura. Then a giant aura storm rose between the two of them.

It was Chris Moonlight.

He intervened between In-gong and Caitlin with a huge aura that attracted their eyes.

"Divine Beast Authority. But it isn't Divine Beast Authority. Rather, it has developed into something else. What the hell happened?"

The battle was brief. There weren't many exchanges.

However, Chris was the successor of Divine Beast Authority so he could see it. The

source of the white aura was something other than Divine Beast Authority.

In-gong turned off his aura and took a normal posture. Despite witnessing Chris' mighty power, he remained calm.

Chris wasn't an unreachable cliff. He was a mountain that could definitely be climbed.

"Divine Sura Authority."

In-gong didn't conceal it. He had a solid alliance with Chris and Caitlin. In order to develop Divine Sura Authority that came from Divine Beast Authority, their help was required in order to master Divine Beast Authority.

"Divine... Sura Authority?"

In-gong nodded at Chris' question. A vibrant aura flowed in his body as he replied.

"It is a new aura management technique that combines Sura Heart Law and Divine Beast Authority."

Caitlin's eyes widened while Chris' shoulders slumped. They stared at In-gong with bemused expressions.

"Ama-zing!"

"Why is Noonim saying this? Shutra is the great one, not Noonim."

# Chapter 77

## Legend #3

"Ama-zing!"

Caitlin's golden eyes shone like lanterns. They were like bright rays of moonlight floating between dark blue hair.

After returning to the tent and explaining roughly, Chris couldn't help cursing. Instead of Caitlin's pure admiration, he shook his head.

"I can't believe it. You managed to combine the aura management method you learnt from the sword duke with Divine Beast Authority? You did it unconsciously?"

There was nothing to say. Chris had grown up hearing he was a genius, but he had never imagined doing something like this.

"I thought that you really had a crazy talent when you learnt Aura but..."

When he thought about it, the process of learning Aura itself was extraordinary. Moreover, In-gong had only learnt it a few months ago and only taken a short time to catch up to Caitlin in a spar. So, the word 'genius' was lacking.

Felicia laughed triumphantly at Chris' expression that was close to a mental collapse. She folded her arms and spoke like she was showing off.

"The sword duke was also very surprised. He said that In-gong's talent may be comparable to Zephyr orabeoni's."

"Wah, really?"

Caitlin's eyes widened with surprise. She had never held a conversation with 2nd Prince Zephyr, but she knew how great 2nd Prince was.

Felicia nodded vigorously at Caitlin's answer.

"Really. Wasn't I there? It was the first time I'd seen the sword duke look so surprised."

In fact, she had only encountered the sword duke a few times, but it was still the first time she saw him surprised.

Caitlin was filled with admiration again as Felicia raised her chin. Chris, who had been watching quietly, opened his mouth again,

"Why is Noonim saying this? Shutra is the great one, not Noonim."

Felicia didn't get upset about the sharp criticism. She simply laughed at Chris and turned toward In-gong.

"Anyway, I was also surprised. And it is amazing."

When Chris first met Shutra at the Red Lightning tribe, he had no other feelings. He had simply thought of Shutra as a half-sibling that Caitlin wanted to get along with.

However, that wasn't the case. He was someone with much more value.

He was a jewel buried in the mud. Deciding to teach Shutra Divine Beast Authority was the best investment he had made in his life.

In-gong was a prince who didn't belong to any of the three factions in the Demon King's Palace.

Instead of hiding it, Chris announced his request clearly.

"Shutra, can you teach Caitlin and I Divine Sura Authority?"

A little more research was needed but if Chris was right, Divine Sura Authority was definitely a development of Divine Beast Authority. It wouldn't cause any trouble if they learnt it.

Chris' eyes gleamed with hot ambition.

However, it was a request that couldn't be accepted. It was unfortunate that the SS rank Divine Sura Authority couldn't be passed onto the two people.



In-gong frowned with confusion as he said,

"I'm sorry, maybe because I didn't do it consciously... I think it isn't possible right now."

His words were the truth. In-gong had yet to grasp Divine Sura Authority completely. He didn't know how to teach the circuit that his aura travelled around. However, it wasn't just that.

'It needs to reach at least level five before I can teach it.'

Divine Sura Authority was currently level three. The points and proficiency needed for it to level up were enormous because the skill was SS ranked. Right now, it was impossible to raise it to level five.

Caitlin's shoulders slumped sadly at In-gong's answer. Chris stared straight into In-gong's eyes and sighed.

"It doesn't seem like a lie but for the creator to not be able to pass it on... it is ridiculous."

At the end, he laughed and knocked against In-gong's shoulder.

'He is suspicious.'

Unlike Caitlin, Chris didn't believe In-gong's words. However, that was normal. If In-gong was in Chris' position, he would show a similar behaviour.

'So, Caitlin is better.'

In-gong glanced toward Caitlin, who formed fists and declared.

"It is really amazing. I have to work even harder. I don't want to fall behind."

He could feel her sincerity and enthusiasm.

In-gong was also impressed that Caitlin wasn't jealous of In-gong. Even though his aura had improved over two months, rather than feeling jealous, she looked towards improvement.

It wasn't easy. This might be an innate aspect of Caitlin.

'She is shining.'

It was serious and not a joke. Felicia thought the same.

"I can't believe that I am even siblings with Caitlin."

As she spoke, she stretched out both hands and grabbed Caitlin. Chris just sneered like it was nonsense,

"Is Noonim my sibling?"

Felicia ignored him and kept patting Caitlin's head. In the end, Chris burst out laughing.

"Anyway... you are strong. Really. Don't I have to worry, now?"

Chris still had far more pure aura. It was almost double In-gong's. Yet In-gong had caught up to Caitlin after only two months. The nature of aura meant it wasn't difficult to reach a certain level of accomplishments, but if Chris was careless, In-gong could catch up to him in an instant.

In-gong raised both hands and waved them.

"I still have a long way to go. I need to learn more about Divine Beast Authority."

There were too many techniques that he hadn't learnt yet. The whole reason why he confessed honestly was for the purpose of getting help from Caitlin and Chris.

Chris nodded slowly.

"I like that desire to improve. I may not be as good as the sword duke, but I will teach you."

"I know."

It was a warm sight between brothers. Felicia gazed at the both of them, then Caitlin

opened her mouth,

"That reminds me, why are both of you here?"

"Well, there must be some reasons. Noonim and Shutra, what is going on? Don't you have to return to the Demon King's Palace after finishing your mission at Thunderdoom Fortress?"

Chris asked question after question. Felicia's eyes narrowed and she shrugged as she replied,

"The sword duke introduced us to a friend of his."

Felicia exchanged glances with In-gong and he explained briefly to Chris and Caitlin about Amita.

"Hmm, I didn't know there was such a craftsman in the area. They are definitely someone I want to meet once."

Unlike Caitlin whose eyes flashed, Chris was pretty calm.

'Indeed, regardless of the name, they are the sword duke's friend. Just think of them as an excellent craftsman.'

Moreover, the nature of the lycanthropes meant they didn't really wear any armour. It was obvious that Chris would be less excited than In-gong.

However, Caitlin was courteous. She asked In-gong with curious eyes,

"Are you making black dragon leather?"

"If possible, I will ask them to make something for Noona."

The materials were overflowing. The question was whether Amita would take an additional order.

"But I can't promise anything."

"Thank you for the thought."

Caitlin laughed brightly again. Just looking at her face was enough to make In-gong feel refreshed. Felicia sat with In-gong to her left and Caitlin to her right, then asked Chris,

"Now, it is your turn. Why are the both of you here?"

Chris had deflected this question twice, so she was suspicious about the reason.

Caitlin looked at Chris with an embarrassed face and he sighed. Instead of lying, he answered honestly,

"I can tell Shutra, but it's a little harder to tell Noonim."

Felicia's face stiffened momentarily, but she nodded. She could understand even if she was upset.

"Okay, then should I go out?"

Felicia's question made Chris sigh again. He leaned back and spoke in a small voice,

"I can tell Noonim as long as you promise not to leak it anywhere."

"Can you believe me?"

"I trust you now."

Felicia was satisfied despite not being trusted in the past. In fact, the relationship between Felicia, Chris and Caitlin had changed greatly since the Red Lightning tribe expedition.

"Okay, I'll tell you, but you can't tell your mother or Silvan."

Chris believed Felicia's verbal promise. She wasn't the type of make a promise she wouldn't keep.

Chris spoke slowly,

"A prisoner escaped. Caitlin and I are searching for the prisoner here."

"Is it normal for the two of you to chase after a prisoner?"

"It isn't normal. The prisoner was trapped in the lowest level of the Grey Tower."

The Grey Tower was the lycanthrope prison where the worst prisoners were stored. There had been an event related to the prisoners in Knight Saga.

A prisoner trapped in the lowest level of the grey tower...

In-gong knew the prisoner's name.

"Gerard Moonlight."

Chris said and Felicia's eyes suddenly widened. She stood up and asked,

"Wait, Moonlight?"

That was the name of the lycanthrope royal family.

Caitlin shrugged and replied,

"Gerard Moonlight is my mother's brother... We would call him uncle."

"It has been 20 years since Gerard entered the Grey Tower. It was before Caitlin and I were born. It was even before Noonim was born."

Chris explained in a rough tone. It seemed like he didn't think of Gerard as a relative.

"Originally, he had been a mighty warrior that the lycanthropes were proud of. If he hadn't gone crazy, he would have taken the throne instead of Mother."

Gerard was the actual heir to the throne. Moreover, he had been an excellent warrior.

However, Felicia had never once heard of him.

"What on earth happened?"

"He became crazy about getting stronger. He couldn't endure it when he hit a wall. Gerard wasn't satisfied with Divine Beast Authority alone and started to reach for other means. I don't have to tell you the ending, right?"

Chris' face was quite tense. In-gong knew the evil of Gerard through Knight Saga and nodded.

"Gerard went completely crazy and it was a disaster. He was one of the members of the lycanthropes' royal family and had received Divine Beast Authority. So, in order to subdue him, a great sacrifice was made."

The death toll had been in the hundreds. Furthermore, the hundreds of people had not been ordinary soldiers. More than half of them had been powerhouses belonging to the lycanthropes' royal guards.

"It was fortunate that everything was finished in the palace. There wasn't any additional damage and... the lycanthropes didn't know what was going on. The royal family erased all records of Gerard. Externally, it was declared that he had become sick and died."

"But he was alive?"

Chris nodded at Felicia's question.

"Mother couldn't stand to kill him. Before he went crazy, he was her dear brother. So, she put him at the lowest level of the Grey Tower."

Now, the worst lycanthrope had escaped from the Grey Tower.

Felicia shook her head and asked with a serious expression,

"Wait a minute, wait a minute. Isn't this abnormal? Is it possible for us to stay here with you?"

Chris and Caitlin had come here to catch Gerard.

Chris waved his hands like he was trying to reassure Felicia.

“Rest assured. Gerard was the strongest warrior 20 years ago. It isn’t an exaggeration to say that he lost more than half his aura in the final battle. Moreover, the Grey Tower has been eating at him for 20 years, so he wouldn’t have recovered yet. The Grey Tower is such a place.’

Elaine Moonlight’s crazy brother... He didn’t get better despite medical care.

Caitlin grabbed Felicia’s hands and started talking.

"I received a report this morning. Uncle Gerard... No, Gerard had gone to the east."

It was the exact opposite direction of this place.

Felicia sighed with relief, but In-gong couldn’t feel relieved so easily. He looked back at Chris and asked,

"Surely, he didn’t break out using his own power?"

In-gong knew about Gerard and the Grey Tower because there had been a related event in Knight Saga.

Breaking Gerard out in order to weaken the strength of the lycanthropes... It was an optional event that hadn’t been required, but the one behind it had been Zephyr. Did that mean Zephyr was involved in his event?

Chris’ eyes narrowed as he replied to In-gong’s question,

"I think he had some help. We are also investigating that."

If Zephyr had truly intervened, then the story was becoming quite serious. Additionally, if it was really Zephyr, In-gong had to figure out why he moved much faster than he had in Knight Saga.

After Chris finishing telling the story, he alternated between looking at In-gong and Felicia.

"It happened 20 years ago and it is now a task inside the lycanthrope territory. It can’t be dismissed. We can’t turn a blind eye. I will finish this case with the power of the lycanthropes like they did 20 years ago."

He was saying he didn't want them to intervene, even if it was as a helping hand.

Felicia and In-gong exchanged glances and In-gong nodded.

Felicia declared,

"Okay, we were just passing by anyway. I hope that it is resolved well."

"Thank you."

Chris rose from his seat and cried out in a mock excited voice,

"The atmosphere is too heavy. Like I said, there is no need to worry. The strongest among the lycanthropes is right here. It will work out well. So, go eat and get a good night's sleep."

"Okay, then let's go eat. I'm looking forward to it."

Felicia responded with the same tone. Chris laughed at Felicia and clapped before calling out to those waiting outside. He treated In-gong and Felicia to a lavish meal.

The tent assigned to In-gong wasn't very big, but there was a cozy and comfortable feeling thanks to the multiple layers of leather.

After doing a training set which included Telekinesis, Dwarf Characters, Dragon Characters and the newly learnt Divine Sura Authority, In-gong went to bed. He felt regretful leaving Caitlin and Chris, but he had to leave on the journey again tomorrow.

In-gong fell asleep, then he stood in darkness.

It was a familiar sight but different from before. There was only one person in the darkness, not four.

'Conquest.'

The golden-crowned female with white hair. Her one red eye and one blue eye stared



at In-gong.

In-gong approached her. He could sense her every time he took one step closer. It was evident that something was blooming in the darkness as it wrapped around her body.

It was the same face he had seen on the slab, but her expression was different. The white face didn't have a cruel ruthlessness but was affectionate and kind. It was like Ainkel's face in the illusion.

In-gong narrowed the distance and reached a few steps away from the white woman. He froze in place when the white woman smiled.

Conquest, one of the four people drawn on the slab... Maybe she was an existence that could match the elder dragons.

Who was she? Was she the one who brought In-gong to this world? Why was she showing herself in front of In-gong.

"Who are you?"

In-gong asked, but instead of answering, the white woman looked at him with eyes full of regret. She lifted her hand suddenly and pointed behind In-gong.

In-gong looked back reflexively. It wasn't only because of the white woman's hand gesture. He could feel it.

There was something located beyond the darkness.

It was a dark area that could be identified even in the darkness.

Both familiar and unfamiliar, In-gong had already felt this sensation once before.

At Thunderdoom Fortress, it had come from the blue aura released by the man with the spear.

This was different from then; it wasn't 'Death'.

"Famine."

The darkness fell apart the moment In-gong spoke, then the dark aura rose like wildfire.

# Chapter 78

## Legend #4

In-gong jumped up. It was dark and cold, but his back was moist with sweat.

A dream.

No, it wasn't an illusion.

The golden-crowned female with white hair and the black aura that was present beyond the darkness...

In-gong moved his gaze in the same direction that the white woman had pointed in. It was weak but obvious. He could feel the black aura.

Famine.

He couldn't explain why the word 'famine' had popped up, but that was the word that clearly represented the aura.

Conquest, War, Death and Famine.

He had felt the aura of Death at Thunderdoom Fortress.

Now, he could feel Famine.

Why?

According to the picture on the slab, they should be on the same side as In-gong who had Conquest, but it didn't feel friendly. The aura was like a huge enemy.

In-gong finished organizing his thoughts. The aura of Famine was approaching and sinister hostility could be felt. Now was the time to act, not think.

'Carack.'

He suddenly thought of Carack. At the same time, an ominous feeling that couldn't be compared to before covered his entire body. As a member of the The King's Knights, he was connected to In-gong.

"Carack!"

In-gong yelled. He invoked the skill Call.

"Cough!"

Carack appeared in front of In-gong. Carack landed on his ass but quickly grasped the situation. He got up and shouted at In-gong,

"Enemy, the enemy! Two soldiers on watch with me were attacked!"

In-gong hurriedly pulled on his pants and top, then instantly opened the inventory and equipped Earth Quaker, White Eagle and the Dragon Scale Greaves.

Carack continued to speak,

"He's small but immensely strong. He is wrapped in a black aura and has grey hair. A long scar on the cheek... A warrior. He doesn't use any weapons."

As expected, Carack remembered the face despite the unexpected situation. He knew what In-gong needed right now.

Grey hair, a long scar on the left cheek and no weapons...

"Gerard Moonlight."

The reasons were insufficient, but he felt sure due to his intuition. Each of them were distinct features, but together, they told a story. It was obviously Gerard Moonlight.

"Carack, what is his location?"

"Uh, I went out to look around, so it is outside the defenses of the camp."

Carack had a meticulous personality, so he couldn't rest easily. It had always been his

habit to look around the surrounding terrain to find passages and escape routes.

In-gong looked at the mini-map. He couldn't see the red and blue dots because it was outside his recognition range, but he could guess the approximate distance.

He was, at most, 500 metres away. If he sprinted using Divine Beast Authority, it would only be a short distance.

In-gong left the tent hurriedly. The moon was shining brightly, so he could see the surroundings clearly even though it was deep into the night. Once again, In-gong faced an unexpected situation.

“Shutra?”

Chris and Caitlin, who were dressed in leather armour and greaves, were standing between the tents. Behind them, there were 20 of the lycanthrope royal guards standing in an orderly manner.

Did they find out about Gerard's raid and were preparing?

‘No.’

It couldn't be. If it was, the alarm would have already been called. Moreover, their faces were very different from someone going to greet the enemy. The two of them were embarrassed to face In-gong.

Why?

In-gong quickly realized,

‘This isn't due to Gerard. They have another purpose here.’

Despite receiving a report this morning that Gerard was in the east, the two hadn't moved their troops.

It wasn't to prepare for an unforeseen situation.

Gerard was also strange. If Gerard had gone to the east in order to escape, why had he come here? Instead of leaving the territory of the lycanthropes, he showed up where

Chris and Caitlin were.

"Gerard has showed up. He is attacking the soldiers on the outskirts and might be here soon."

In-gong said quickly and astonishment formed on Chris and Caitlin's faces. In-gong continued speaking without slowing down,

"Tell me, why are the two of you here? I don't think it is due to Gerard."

Chris gritted his teeth. His eyes shook as he hesitated on whether to answer. It was Caitlin who opened her mouth,

"It is because of the Moonlight Extract."

Chris looked at Caitlin urgently but didn't stop her. She then continued on in a decisive voice because if Gerard had really appeared, now wasn't the time to keep secrets.

"It is a herb that blooms once in a 100 years. Oppa and I came here in order to wait for the Moonlight Extract to bloom. We heard about Gerard's jailbreak afterwards. Right now, we were just about to go and pick the Moonlight Extract."

The stories that had been scattered randomly started to converge.

Moonlight Extract, In-gong knew that item. One of the treasures of the lycanthropes, it was obtained by defeating either Chris or Caitlin at the large lycanthrope battle. It was a consumable item with a huge recovery effect as it could heal someone even if they were on their last breath.

Chris looked back at In-gong.

"Do you think Gerard is aiming for the Moonlight Extract?"

That was a possibility. No, it was highly likely when thinking of the story.

Gerard's body was ruined due to staying in the Grey Tower for many years.

He was still obsessed with becoming stronger, so he wouldn't allow his body and mind to remain weakened.

Chris didn't wait for an answer. He was breathing roughly with excitement.

"It doesn't matter. Although it is secondary, catching Gerard is also one of the purposes. If he shows up, we will overpower him."

A blue aura surrounded him and it was at that moment...

"Kyaaak!"

A scream rang out. There wasn't any intense light, but he could tell by the sound alone what had happened. Moreover, the scream was familiar.

"Felicia!"

In-gong shot off like lightning. Chris and Caitlin immediately followed as they headed to a place with red flames. It was clearly Felicia's specialty, the fire barrier.

"Green Wind!"

In-gong raised his left hand like he was going to throw White Eagle. Green Wind understood In-gong's intentions and spread out the metal plates to fly. White Eagle would fly first to defend Felicia.

Chris also gave commands while running. The lycanthropes blew their horns and all the soldiers who heard them moved. More than 100 lycanthropes cried out and the whole forest seemed to shake.

The moment seemed to last a long time. Finally, he arrived at Felicia's tent where a barrier of fire rose into the sky. Felicia was standing behind White Eagle and, fortunately, she wasn't hurt. Delia, who seemed somewhat injured, was limping beside her.

'Master!'

Instead of answering, In-gong rushed forward toward Felicia. White Eagle was returned to his left arm as he looked simultaneously at both the mini-map and the scene before him.

A man was standing beyond the blazing flames.

There was only one red dot on the mini-map.

Famine.

A black aura.

He was different from the Gerard that In-gong had faced in Knight Saga. This Gerard was surrounded by a black aura instead of a grey one and the power of Famine was felt from the darkness.

Lycanthrope soldiers were lying at Gerard's feet. One was reminiscent of a mummy.

Even though they had just met, In-gong's throat seemed dry.

It was like when he had faced the man with the spear at Thunderdoom Fortress.

Gerard was comparable to him. In-gong couldn't guess who out of the two of them was stronger, but it was obvious that Gerard was overwhelming.

The Gerard in Knight Saga hadn't been this strong. He was obviously a strong presence, but like Chris explained, his body was ruined due to living in the Grey Tower for so long.

If there was a difference, it was that he was influenced by the black power of Famine.

Chris and Caitlin stood next to In-gong. The lycanthropes raised their aura like ignited flames and surrounded Gerard.

On the mini-map, dozens of blue dots were surrounding one red dot, but despite this, Gerard didn't feel any fear. His calm face looked beyond the flames.

"You are Chris, Elaine's child. The one next to you is Caitlin?"

He was expressionless, but there was some warmth in his voice. Caitlin bit her lip while Chris stretched out his right hand and blocked Caitlin. He stared at Gerard and said,



"Rebel Gerard. There will be no conversation between you and I. Gerard Moonlight of the lycanthrope royal family died on that day 20 years ago."

Chris seemed to be speaking to Caitlin instead of Gerard. Caitlin formed tight fists while Gerard gave a small smile.

"Your decisive side resembles Elaine."

Felicia's fire barrier eventually collapsed and at that moment, Gerard's hand moved. Dozens of dark energies crossed the air at the same time.

White Eagle spread out and protected In-gong, Felicia and Delia, while Chris swung his fists at the dark energies headed towards him and Caitlin. Carack raised his shield as he grabbed Seira's waist.

However, most of the ordinary lycanthrope warriors couldn't respond properly. Dozens of lycanthropes were struck in the neck or eyes. There was the smell of poison and even burning.

Gerard's smile grew even bigger. Gerard's hands went to his waist and one of the lycanthrope commanders shouted urgently,

"Hit him!"

Dozens of lycanthropes moved simultaneously. They had witnessed Gerard's unusual offensive and couldn't ignorantly allow him to do whatever he wanted.

Gerard rolled his grey eyes. Instead of striking the lycanthrope warriors, his fists hit the ground.

Kwang!

The earth shook violently and the black aura around Gerard soared into the sky. He rushed forward as the lycanthropes were thrown into the air.

However, that wasn't the end. He pushed off against the ground and grabbed the throat of one of the lycanthropes. Gerard literally threw the soldier to the ground and declared,

"Drain."

It was a word containing power.

In-gong sensed it intuitively.

The power of Conquest shouted,

'Famine!'

It was the power to drain energy!

The body of the lycanthrope soldier, which looked like a gigantic bear, quickly shrivelled up. Without even a scream, he became as dry as a mummy that was several hundred years old.

The power of Conquest which conquered all things and blessed them with strength.

The power of Famine that took away all strength...

Gerard's black energy became stronger. It seemed like the lycanthrope soldier's life force had strengthened him.

Gerard raised his head. While the lycanthrope warriors shook with trepidation, Chris formed fists. He kicked at the ground angrily.

"Caitlin!"

Caitlin immediately responded to the command. The two people triggered their auras and rushed toward Gerard.

Gerard grinned at both of them. He welcomed the two people with his black aura.

# Chapter 79

## Legend #5

Spending 20 years in solitary without sunlight...

In-gong couldn't imagine it.

He couldn't guess what emotions or thoughts he would have felt during that time.

Miasma.

It wasn't just the power of Famine that turned the aura pitch black. Gerard's deep-seated grudge and resentment dyed his aura into a dark shade.

Chris had a hunch when Gerard blew away several lycanthrope soldiers in his first attack.

Ordinary soldiers wouldn't be able to deal with him. Considering the strange power he used, there was a possibility that rather than exhausted, he would be strengthened.

It would just be a futile sacrifice. Even though it was risky, Chris had to do it himself.

Chris struck Gerard from the front. Caitlin used to time to make up for Chris by piercing through the gap.

A pincer move that couldn't be done with just anyone. They needed to be aware of each other's breaths as well as what attacks were on the way. In a pincer move, those who couldn't engage with each other weren't able to create gaps.

Chris and Caitlin's pincer move was perfect as the two of them knew each other very well. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that they were two different bodies moving as one.

Gerard wasn't pushed at all by the stormy joint attack. He proved why he had been called the strongest lycanthrope 20 years ago by blocking all the attacks from Chris

and Caitlin. It was so exquisite that it was like the three people were dancing.

The lycanthrope soldiers didn't dare get in the way of the three people. Felicia had gathered magic power in her hands, but she couldn't do anything.

In-gong breathed calmly as he observed the scene. Despite drawing with Caitlin in the spar, he wouldn't be able to interfere. If n-gong moved, it was more likely that he would ruin their flow.

'The power of Famine.'

Gerard drained the life force of the lycanthrope soldiers. After the life force was robbed, the black energy was visibly strengthened.

'Direct contact is needed.'

It wasn't enough to touch the body; time was needed. Compared to In-gong's 'Conquest', his command was 'Drain'. Maybe, it was even a single process.

Famine Knight.

Now that he had time to think about it, Gerard had inherited the power of Famine from the man in black robes who had been on the slab.

However, weren't the four people in the picture on one side? Were they hostile to each other? Otherwise, was Conquest rejected by the other three?

"Below the King's Flag!"

In-gong stopped his thoughts and used the power of Conquest. The moment the dwarf dagger hit the ground, a white aura covered Chris and Caitlin.

There was a change in the movements of Chris, Caitlin and Gerard who had been like precision machines.

Chris and Caitlin were disconcerted by the support but soon adapted to their stronger bodies. They started pushing Gerard faster than ever.

Gerard was at a loss for a moment as he gazed at the two people. He glared at In-gong

as his black aura rose vividly.

‘Conquest Knight.’

Gerard didn’t say anything, but In-gong heard Gerard’s voice clearly. The whirlwind of Chris and Caitlin’s pincer attack erased his voice, but In-gong couldn’t forget it.

The three people became more violent.

Gerard, who was stuck between the two people, suddenly laughed and released a power of Famine that was greater than before.

It was only for a moment, but the shape was clear. The black aura reached Caitlin’s dark blue aura and Chris’ blue aura, placing a brake on the movements of the two people.

Chris shattered Famine by strengthening his aura, but Caitlin couldn’t. Her movements were stopped and Gerard didn’t miss this gap.

The change was rapid and instant. Gerard stood firmly as he took one of Chris’ blows and headed toward Caitlin. Gerard’s left arm shot toward her like a snake. Chris’ eyes widened. Caitlin felt Gerard’s palm touching her abdomen and the balance collapsed.

“Caitlin!”

Felicia screamed desperately. Caitlin’s slender body flew into the air and Chris’ fist aimed for Gerard again.

Gerard didn’t face this fist. He pushed strength into his legs and jumped up after Caitlin. His palm struck Caitlin’s abdomen again like a lightning strike!

Kwang!

Caitlin was pushed vertically towards the ground. There was a deafening roar as red blood burst out.

Gerard landed on the ground, then slammed his knee down on Caitlin. Caitlin coughed up blood again and Chris roared like a beast.

Gerard glanced at Chris and used one hand to throw Caitlin at Chris.

Chris was relentless. He swallowed his tears and flew forward. Instead of taking Caitlin, he moved toward Gerard. Caitlin rolled on the ground as he exchanged blows with Gerard.

A loud shock shook the atmosphere. The blue aura and black aura exploded together and parts of the ground, which couldn't survive the violence, collapsed.

Felicia ran forward despite the risk. She grabbed Caitlin and dragged her away. Carack and Seira followed quickly while White Eagle flew behind Felicia to protect her.

The light went out. Chris was coughing up blood and it was the same for Gerard as well. It was the result of them striking each other's chest with a devastating strike.

Chris shouted as he swung a fist. It had a strong momentum, but Gerard didn't avoid it. Unlike Chris, he still had one trick remaining.

Beast Form:

The true power of the lycanthropes.

Gerard's upper body swelled up and a wolf-like roar burst from his mouth.

Chris and Gerard's blows struck each other and the exchange turned into a slugfest.

The ground shook again. The momentum of their fists tore through the atmosphere and the broken pieces of aura destroyed everything they touched. The surrounding terrain started to change due to them.

It had only been one minute at most, but at the end of that time, which felt like hundreds of minutes, Chris couldn't stand up properly. His blue aura was on the verge of being snuffed, like a candle about to go out, and he fell down as both his knees were broken.

Gerard's hand grabbed Chris. He was also a mess, but he had more room to move than Chris.

He looked at Chris. There was a warm smile on his face that was unthinkable in this

situation. Then Gerard triggered the power of Famine!

Gigantic - Piston!

As everybody stopped, In-gong's white aura exploded.

Since the beginning of the battle, In-gong had only been focused on Gerard. Once Chris' aura went down, Gerard revealed a gap. The moment he was drunk with the joy of victory, In-gong moved.

The giant fist moved through the surrounding area and In-gong sensed It would hit. In-gong aimed for Gerard's chest but Gerard caught the blow in his left shoulder and he flew through the air.

Gerard stared at In-gong. In-gong was also staring at Gerard, but this wasn't the end. Gigantic Piston had struck Gerard's body. It was a unique opportunity given to In-gong.

Earth Quaker roared as he had invoked Dragon Blood before using Gigantic Piston. Shortly after their eyes crossed, In-gong poured out a series of attacks toward Gerard.

Gerard was clearly strong. In relation to martial arts, he was in a place far above In-gong.

However, he was tired. The battle with Chris had damaged him and Gigantic Piston then went on to smash the rest of him.

So, In-gong now had to see it through to the end. If he collapsed, the others wouldn't be able to survive.

Gerard couldn't use his left arm, so In-gong aimed for that point. Once the white and black auras clashed, a terrible shockwave covered the whole area.

The powers of Conquest and Famine also collided. The strength of Conquest was depleted by Famine's power.

Delia and the lycanthropes were protecting Chris and Caitlin. Felicia was curing Caitlin with recovery magic while the lycanthrope soldiers once again formed a circle.

For Gerard, In-gong was a roadblock. If it wasn't for In-gong, this situation would have

been over the moment Chris had fallen. Even if there were dozens of hundreds of ordinary lycanthrope soldiers, Gerard couldn't be captured.

Conquest. Conquest Knight.

Anger rose, but it wasn't just Gerard's personal anger. Famine was furious and he expressed a strong hatred for Conquest.

Kwang!

Once again, his aura exploded, but this was different from before. Gerard's right hand turned quickly, creating a repulsive force that pushed at In-gong like a snake. The moment In-gong realized it, Gerard's palm was already touching his chest.

It was the blow that broke Caitlin.

Divine Beast Authority Secret Principle: Arang.

It was a wolf-like aura that struck the enemy's body directly, collapsing it from the inside.

This attack was a success. Like Caitlin, In-gong opened his mouth and spat out blood.

However, In-gong wasn't thrown into the air. He stepped back and White Eagle supported In-gong's back. Rather than flying away, In-gong gritted his teeth and raised his head.

Gerard stared at In-gong. At that moment, Daphne hurriedly shouted something at In-gong,

"Spirit Enlightenment!"

It was urgent. It didn't reach him completely, but there was no time to wait for the spirit's power to be completely activated. However, Daphne's magic gave In-gong the strength to take one step.

In-gong took a step forward. After struggling with his legs. he reached out.

He had just learnt it, so it was only level one.



However, it was enough.

Divine Beast Authority Secret Principle: Arang.

The white aura ate at Gerard's body. The moment Arang struck him, Gerard's eyes widened with amazement and In-gong took a step back. He once again aimed for Gerard's chest!

Explosive Power...

It wasn't Divine Beast Authority but Divine Sura Authority!

The white aura slammed into Gerard's chest.

# Chapter 80

## Legend #6

The scary thing about Arang was that it didn't end with a simple blow but broke the circulation of aura itself.

Gerard's Arang, a secret technique of Divine Beast Authority, literally tore open In-gong's aura. However, it was also the same with In-gong's Arang. It was clunky compared to Gerard's, but it was still obviously an Arang.

In-gong coughed up blood as his white aura exploded. Thick blood flowed along his jaw and there was no sensation in his right hand. Although he could still see, everything in front of him was blurry.

In-gong didn't collapse. He twisted his upper body and watched Gerard closely. After being struck by the explosion, Gerard was raising his body with some difficulty.

Gerard was also a mess. He had released his Beast Form and his left arm seemed to have lost its function. The energy of Famine was also weak.

However, he was still alive. Gerard giggled strangely as he raised his upper body. Then at that moment, a sharp dagger flew toward In-gong.

Kakang!

White Eagle blocked the dagger. The white metal spread out and blocked In-gong from Gerard's view. Blood was streaming into Gerard's ears, so he didn't hear anything, but he had a hunch.

The moment that White Eagle flew back into the air, In-gong rushed toward Gerard. Instead of using aura again, In-gong shot a fire arrow at his right leg. Flames rose along the Dragon Scale Greaves' scales.

Lightning.

Rather than a flash of whiteness, lightning poured down with the red flames. Gerard moved his body reflexively to avoid the attack, but it was unreasonable. In-gong struck Gerard's left shoulder.

Rather than an physical hit, it was more like lightning had hit Gerard's left shoulder. That shoulder then turned into charcoal and crumbled.

Gerard flinched backwards. In-gong's knee was broken, but he rose again and yelled instead of starting another offensive.

"Carack!"

"Kuraha!"

Carack entered the fight that no one had dared to intervene. His huge battle axe slammed into Gerard. Gerard's chest shattered like his shoulder did and White Eagle struck his abdomen. Gerard's body was thrown back a few metres.

Carack grabbed In-gong's waist. Then In-gong leaned over Carack and looked at Gerard. However, it wasn't over yet.

"Retreat!"

In-gong screamed in a cracked voice as Gerard's right hand slammed into the ground. He exploded his aura of Famine like it was his last hurrah.

"Drain!"

The cry filled the surrounding area and the power of Famine stretched out around Gerard.

Carack hugged In-gong and turned around. Green Wind generated a force field that shielded In-gong while the lycanthrope soldiers hurried to avoid Famine.

'Master!'

Green wind shrieked. The power of Famine collided with White Eagle and exploded. The land that had been swept by Famine was stained with a grey light and lost its beauty, appearing as a drought-ridden land. The grass was withered and giant trees

became dry and fell down after not being able to endure their weight anymore.

There were also victims among the lycanthrope soldiers. Those, who couldn't escape completely and had a part of their bodies touched by Famine, fell to the ground with a moan. Additionally, there were those who lost an arm or a leg.

After the power of Famine disappeared, Gerard was gone. He had obviously used the absorbed power to escape.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

The clear voice rang in his head. This was thanks to the battle ending after Gerard had lost his will to fight.

A pure white light wound around In-gong. All the trauma, which had been afflicted upon In-gong's body, were healed.

The lycanthrope commanders quickly understood the situation. They stared at Carack holding onto In-gong and shouted,

"Track him! Don't let him get away!"

"Follow! Don't approach him carelessly and use throwing weapons!"

Even though they preferred close combat, it didn't mean the lycanthropes didn't use any weapons. Moreover, this wasn't an ordinary village but a military base. The lycanthrope warriors grabbed spears hurriedly and started to run in the direction that Gerard escaped to.

In-gong wasn't able to look at them. He closed his eyes and panted for air.

The level up effect healed the trauma, but the inside of his body was still a mess. The cause of the problem was that Arang had disrupted the circulation of his aura. It was hard to even breathe properly.

"Prince, Prince. Breathe, slowly. Take slow and deep breaths."

Carack lay In-gong down carefully and started fidgeting. He wanted to do something, but the only thing he could do was wipe the blood from In-gong's mouth.

Chris' voice was heard at that moment.

"This way. Come on, hurry. Lay Caitlin down, next to him."

As Chris leaned against one of his men, his voice was broken by a cough. He was in a terrible state, but ironically, he was the best out of the three who had fought directly against Gerard.

Gerard had run away, but taking care of In-gong and Caitlin who were before him was more urgent than chasing after someone who had just stepped out of the Grey Tower.

As he approached Carack, who was cuddling In-gong, Chris frowned like he was swallowing the pain and said,

"Moonlight, extract."

It was an incomplete order, but it was obvious what he meant. Caitlin's aide, Seira, quickly got up and ran to one place. Felicia cried out desperately,

"Don't overdo it! You are also in a serious condition right now!"

Felicia, who had been using her recovery magic on Caitlin, reached out to Chris. Chris stared at Felicia's face, which had become of mess of tears and a runny nose, and laughed.

"Noonim's face is also serious."

"Chris!"

"I'm fine. Just- trauma. The problem- Shutra... Caitlin."

Seira came running back. She was holding a palm sized object in her hand.

Chris grabbed Felicia's hand and said,

"Now this, most- magic power is strong... Noonim. So, I'll leave it to Noonim."

Felicia had no idea what the Moonlight Extract was, but based on the circumstances, she could roughly guess what it was.

Felicia nodded and Chris grimaced again from the pain. He smiled and continued speaking,

"As soon as the box is open, magic power, Moonlight Extract... wrap it. Wrap in magic power, divide in half... Shutra and Caitlin, feed."

"U-understood."

Chris released Felicia's hand. Felicia wiped Chris' blood from her hands and took a deep breath. Tears were still flowing as she accepted the box from Seira.

As a skilled magician, Felicia was also competent in dealing with herbs. It was obvious that the effect of the Moonlight Extract would be diminished if it was exposed to the air without being wrapped in magic power. It was likely that there was a special magic treatment for it.

Felicia covered the box with magic power and slowly opened the lid. Inside, there was a white herb that was a little longer than the index finger.

It seemed to be a root. If In-gong saw it, he would have thought it was wild ginseng.

Felicia picked up the Moonlight Extract carefully as she swallowed her saliva. She hesitated before splitting the Moonlight Extract into two.

Then there was a problem.

"H-how do I feed this to them?"

The broken pieces of Moonlight Extract were quite hard. An unconscious person wouldn't be able to chew and swallow it.

Carack asked with an excited face,

"Should you feed them with your mouth?"

He raised his hands to his mouth and imitated a chewing motion of an animal taking care of a young cub.

Chris slowly shook his head at Carack's question.

"No, mo-on. Moonlight Extract. Put in the mouth, will melt."

Felicia sighed with relief and turned toward Caitlin. Her trauma was recovered thanks to Felicia's recovery spells, but her insides were a mess. Felicia's eyes were filled with tears as she stared at Caitlin.

Chris spoke again,

"Daph-ne. Druid, I heard. Noonim, help. Absorption..."

"Understood!"

For druids who lived in nature, knowing herbal medicine was a basic. Daphne's task with to use the power of the spirits to help the herb be absorbed.

"Star-t."

Felicia nodded and pushed the piece of Moonlight Extract into Caitlin's mouth. As Chris said, the Moonlight Extract started to melt immediately. In an instant, it became a white liquid and was sucked into Caitlin's throat.

Daphne closed her eyes and started to chant the names of the spirits. Then, miraculously, a white light started to emerge from Caitlin's whole body.

"M-moonlight is coming from her body!"

Carack shouted with surprise. At that moment, Green Wind appeared next to Carack. She spoke sharply with a hard face that was different than normal,

"The power holding the moonlight is melting. Hurry and give Master the Moonlight Extract. I will help Master absorb it."

The lycanthropes were shocked by Green Wind's sudden appearance, but Felicia, who knew about Green Wind's existence, was different. She hurriedly pushed the piece of

Moonlight Extract into In-gong's mouth.

The beginning was exactly like it had happened with Caitlin, but it changed once Green Wind touched it.

White light came out from In-gong's entire body. It wasn't a gentle glow like Caitlin's. The light was enough to fill their field of view as In-gong's body slightly floated up.

Carack glanced at Green Wind urgently, but she didn't have an answer. Her startled expression proved that this situation was unexpected.

"Ah, really! Why can't one thing be easy?"

Carack exclaimed. Felicia asked Chris hurriedly,

"What is happening? Is something wrong?"

Felicia was on the verge- no, she was already crying. Instead of answering straight away, Chris stared at In-gong. If the light from Caitlin's body was like the stars, In-gong's could be compared to the full moon.

In-gong's body floated a little higher. Caitlin's body also rose like she was affected by In-gong. Green Wind and Daphne both reached out to the two people as they closed their eyes tightly and desperately called upon the power of the spirits.

The Moonlight Extract was a flower that bloomed once in 100 years. In fact, this was the first time Chris had seen the process of someone eating the Moonlight Extract.

Caitlin's reaction was similar to what had been written in the general records, but it wasn't the same for In-gong. Moreover, Caitlin's reaction was changed now.

Like Felicia said, was there something wrong?

"Maybe, but on the contrary..."

"On the contrary?"

Chris swallowed his saliva. He looked at the white light that couldn't be distinguished anymore and said,



"The legend of the Moonlight Extract, maybe this is it."

An unusual record.

The true legend of the Moonlight Extract that only remained in the records of the lycanthrope royal family.

Chris laughed bitterly. Carack's words were true.

"Everywhere he goes, uncommon things happen."

Felicia looked back at In-gong. The warm light, that didn't hurt the eyes, pushed against the darkness.

# Chapter 81

## Legend #7

The founder of the lycanthrope royal family was the one who first discovered the Moonlight Extract.

Originally called the wolf king, he gathered the scattered lycanthropes and set up a kingdom.

Just like the fierce jungle of the Demon World, the wolf king faced numerous challenges.

Many foreign enemies invaded them and within the lycanthropes, many challenged the wolf king for the throne.

The wolf king responded to all these challenges. He broke the heads of those aiming for the thrones and crushed the outsiders threatening the lycanthropes.

Then one day, he faced the biggest challenge of his life. The red dragon, Castian, invaded the lycanthropes' territory.

The wolf king succeeded in defeating the ferocious red dragon at the end of a desperate struggle that lasted seven days and seven nights.

However, the wolf king wasn't unharmed. His heart was destroyed and he was on the verge of death when he discovered a light splitting the night sky. At some point, the king stopped and saw a white flower blooming in front of him.

The wolf king didn't think much of the discovery as he hadn't found the Moonlight Extract; it had selected him.

The wolf king took the Moonlight Extract. It dissolved into his chest and became the new heart of the wolf king.

The wolf king, who had obtained the heart of the moon, continued his new life. He gave

himself the surname, Moonlight, after it saved his life.

The wolf king's blood became the royal family of the lycanthropes, but afterwards, unlike the wolf king, no one was able to obtain a new heart from the Moonlight Extract.

This was the legend of the Moonlight Extract.

The true efficacy of the Moonlight Extract had only been enjoyed by the original wolf king, who had been considered the strongest lycanthrope ever.

The royal family of the lycanthropes had considered it as a legend. Until now, the Moonlight Extract had just been a mysterious herb with significant healing powers. They had thought the wolf king had exaggerated the story after he had taken the Moonlight Extract and it had healed his wounds.

However, that wasn't the case.

The legend of the Moonlight Extract had never been exaggerated.

[Protagonist Correction has enhanced the performance.]

[Protagonist Body is responding to the power of the Moonlight Extract.]

The essence of moonlight melted into In-gong and his Protagonist Body accepted the power entirely.

The circulation of his aura, which was dull and broken, stopped moving. It stopped in one place and the calmness of the moonlight's power settled into it.

Conquest.

If the power of Famine was to drain everything, Conquest was to dominate.

The starting point in the circulation of aura was all the same, like the heart that delivered blood to the whole body.

In-gong's aura heart already existed. Now, the Moonlight Extract settled next to that heart. The Moonlight Extract joined with his aura to create a new heart.

Two hearts, two starting points...

This was true efficacy of the Moonlight Extract that no one had seen since the original wolf king.

The circulation of his aura began again and it sprang from two starting points.

This was accepted by Divine Sura Authority. Divine Sura Authority, which was made up of Divine Beast Authority and Sura Heart Law, now started at two points.

The light gushing out from In-gong's body started to subside. Chris, who was focusing on the flow of aura, couldn't hide his wonder. He formed fists as he imagined the effect of aura that originated from two starting points.

Moreover, this change didn't only happen to In-gong.

Caitlin had also accepted the power of the Moonlight Extract. It was clear that In-gong's change had an effect on Caitlin.

Compared to In-gong, it was weaker. It was like the power of moonlight had gathered in In-gong's body while the power of starlight had gathered in Caitlin's body.

Caitlin's aura responded to In-gong's aura. Just like the stars in the night sky shone in the moonlight, Caitlin's aura started to follow In-gong's aura.

Instead of moonlight, a pure white aura surrounded In-gong. Caitlin's dark blue aura twined with the white and the two different coloured aura wrapped around the two people.

Green Wind raised a hand and stepped back. It was the same for Daphne. Green Wind and Daphne had done all they could do. Now, they could only watch the miracle of the Moonlight Extract.

In-gong and Caitlin, who were floating in the air, started to descend slowly. The two auras around them turned into a soft glow and disappeared.

The hearts of new auras lay in the bodies of the two people.

Chris couldn't say anything while Felicia just sighed with relief. She touched the calm

faces of In-gong and Caitlin gently.

In-gong opened his eyes to darkness. Before him stood the golden-crowned, white woman.

She was close but far away. In-gong stood face to face with her but couldn't communicate. This wasn't referring to the manifestation of her voice that was heard in every crisis, but that she couldn't have a proper conversation.

Famine Knight.

Gerard Moonlight, he held the power of Famine in his hands.

However, the power of Famine he had wasn't strong yet. The original source of Famine was stronger still.

In-gong could tell because he had faced the power directly. Gerard was still an incomplete knight and it was the same for In-gong as well.

Conquest and Famine.

The source of power that the man with a spear had given off was Death. The man with the spear wasn't the Death Knight, but it was obvious that the Death Knight had given the power to him.

The only one left was War.

In Knight Saga, Gerard hadn't been a Famine Knight.

Conquest, War, Death and Famine were all forces that hadn't existed in Knight Saga.

What were the four of them? Why were there four knights to inherit their strengths? What was the purpose of the knights? Why was the Death Knight aiming at Zephyr?

It was almost certain that the Death Knight was an external force as he was hostile to the Demon King's Palace.

The Famine Knight, Gerard, was hostile to the lycanthropes. Additionally, he didn't stop there. Famine itself had an enormous hostility toward Conquest.

Were Death and Famine on one side?

Why did Famine express hostility toward Conquest? It wasn't just because of In-gong's confrontation with Gerard. The enmity of Famine was rooted in something much deeper.

The white woman... Sadness flashed in the red and blue eyes of Conquest. She reached out her hand slowly and stroked the air like she was touching In-gong's cheek despite not being able to reach him. Then she opened her mouth slowly,

"Conquest Knight, my one and only hope."

The white woman's voice was cut off like she had lost all strength after a few words. She gave another sad smile before melting into the darkness.

In-gong closed his eyes. Like the white woman, he melted into the darkness.

Gerard dragged himself across the ground. He had cut off his left arm that couldn't be used anymore, but he couldn't suppress the pain.

His remaining arm was touching the ground. He pushed against it and his heavy legs moved a little bit.

"Find him! He is around here!"

"I smell blood!"

The voices of the lycanthropes weren't far away. Gerard gritted his teeth and concentrated all his power in his right hand. His aura circulation was a mess, so it took a lot of work to collect the power.

Gerard sat on the ground and panted. The soil was wet and cold but that helped relieve the pain.

Gerard counted down. He closed his eyes and focused on his hearing while gathering strength in his right arm.

Kwang!

The explosive power of Divine Beast Authority burst through his right arm. Gerard leapt up and hit the lycanthrope soldier who came close to him. The soldier swung his arm reflexively at Gerard, but it just passed through air. Gerard grabbed one of the soldier's arms, threw him down and grabbed his neck with one hand.

The neck of the beast form lycanthrope was too large that it was hard to squeeze. However, Gerard used brute force and struck the soldier's neck with the palm of his hand. There was a terrible sound as the wolf lycanthrope soldier's neck broke.

"Kukek!"

The lycanthrope soldier lost his breath and tried to reach out, but Gerard placed more force on the soldier's neck.

"Pant... Pant..."

The lycanthrope soldier collapsed and Gerard triggered the power of Famine. He gained a certain amount of strength back, but it was still lacking, like collecting water in a bucket with a hole.

"There!"

"Throw the spears!"

There was no room for his body to avoid them. The spears pierced Gerard and the dead lycanthrope soldier at the same time.

It was hot. Despite being on the verge of death, the pain was vivid.

"Throw!"

Spears flew one after another and pierced his shoulders, waist, thighs and all over his body. Even for the lycanthropes with their huge vitality, this level of injury would cause death.

The lycanthrope soldiers didn't approach Gerard once. It would take more time to kill Gerard, but they were being careful.

Gerard laughed. Despite his lips cramping from the pain and injury, it was definitely a laugh.

He had spent 20 years in the deepest part of the Grey Tower. It had been a horrible time spent in the darkness where not even the moonlight could reach.

He would die without being able to resolve the resentment and animosity that had built up.

Elaine Moonlight. His sister, she had taken away everything of his; she was a hateful enemy.

Chris and Caitlin, her children.

And the Conquest Knight. The reason for all of this. The person who had blocked him on the verge of victory!

Gerard was no longer looking forward and only darkness could be seen in his eyes.

However, Gerard saw a man in the darkness. He wore robes that were darker than black as he stared down at Gerard.

'Now, will you accept?'

Famine.

He differed from War or Death. The comparison with Conquest itself was ridiculous.

He was always hungry and his desires were never satisfied. He didn't just want to choose a knight like the other three.

What he wanted was the incarnation of Famine, the existence of Famine itself.

Gerard laughed at him. He finally released the last strings on his pride and allowed Famine into his soul.



He wasn't Gerard in the pure sense anymore.

The only thing remaining was Famine mixed in with a black desire that would never be fulfilled.

The power of Famine swallowed Gerard's heart and his soul was conquered.

The Famine Knight, formerly called Gerard, smiled. Famine found it ridiculous that he had used the term 'conquest'.

"Drain."

The whisper was a beginning and an end. The lycanthrope soldiers, who were aiming spears at Gerard, were now in the realm of Famine without being aware of it.

If he had to name it, it was a garden of draining. All things within the range were drained by Famine.

The legs of the lycanthrope soldiers surrounding Gerard hardened. They couldn't even scream as the cracked land covered them.

The Famine Knight drained everything in his realm and raised his body slowly. Some of the broken bodies collapsed, but he didn't care. His gaze was looking at a time long ago.

Everything had become warped since the day Ainkel was murdered 1,000 years ago.

Now, it was time to restart. This time there had to be a different ending.

The Famine Knight gazed at the moonlight, then he melted into the darkness.

# Chapter 82

## The Right To Rule

When waking up from a deep sleep, In-gong usually had to face the ceiling or wall. However, when his eyes opened this time, the first thing he saw was long green hair that tickled his face and a beautiful face.

Green eyes blinked as In-gong stared at them sleepily. He almost screamed, but the other person was faster.

‘Master!’

Green Wind laughed and embraced In-gong. Instead of hugging Green Wind, In-gong moved his eyes. Beyond Green Wind’s hair, he saw an expensive looking ceiling.

‘And...’

In-gong tried to breathe and think while Green Wind covered his body. He lifted his free left hand and patted Green Wind’s back as he was about to speak.

‘Wait.’

There was something strange. Only his left hand was free. In-gong had no problems staring at his right side because Green Wind was hugging his left. He turned his head to the right and raised his upper body.

"Master, are you okay now? Have strength."

Green Wind was in an actualized state, so she had weight. There were some questions about the conservation of mass, but In-gong had other worries at the moment. Instead of digging deeper, he glanced at Caitlin who was holding onto In-gong’s right hand.

Expensive-looking ceiling and room... and a huge bed.

In-gong was dressed in clothes that were easy to peel off and so was Caitlin who was

lying beside him.

After carefully untangling his hands from Caitlin's, In-gong looked back at Green Wind sitting on his thigh.

"Explain."

Green Wind quickly nodded at his request.

"This is the lycanthropes' palace. Master has been bedridden for four days."

"Four days?"

"Four days. I have been looking after you for four days. Staring blankly is one of my specialties."

Green Wind said with a laugh. In-gong now knew why Green Wind was staring at him. It was because Green Wind had been lonely.

In-gong hugged Green Wind very tightly. Green Wind made a sound but was faithful to her usual instincts when being praised.

"Umm, I don't know why but I feel good. Continue."

In-gong smiled at Green Wind and pushed her out of his arms slightly. He patted her head and said,

"Please continue explaining to me."

"I understand. As I said, this is the lycanthrope palace. The reason why Master and Caitlin are lying on one bed is to increase the healing effect of both of you."

"Healing effect?"

It was surprised by the unexpected story. Green Wind pulled back and looked In-gong up and down.

"How much does Master remember?"

“Uh... Gerard ran away?”

In-gong closed his eyes and searched through his memories. He remembered that Gerard had lost his shoulder to Lightning.

'Carack caught me and Green Wind protected me.'

Then his memories became confusing. He seemed to recall Felicia's crying face, but he couldn't remember it properly.

Green Wind said,

"Felicia gave Moonlight Extract to Master and Caitlin. As Chris ordered, she split it into two and something unexpected happened to Master and Caitlin's body due to the Moonlight Extract."

In-gong quickly activated the status window and skills window. Not long after, he was able to capture the changes in the skills window.

[Protagonist Body]  
[Special Passive Skill: Moonlight Core]

'Second... aura heart?'

He closed his eyes. He realized that he could feel a moonlight core deep in his chest. His flow of aura was now different from before.

In Knight Saga, the Moonlight Extract was a miraculous herb that could revive someone if they had a single breath left. That alone was awesome, but there was another effect?

In-gong focused his attention on the flow of aura for a while. Although there were two starting points, his aura didn't seem that different. Both flows became one during the cycle. It seemed to create a much faster and stronger flow than before.

'Dual cores?'

Was it like a two engine jet fighter?

That wasn't the only mysterious point. The nature of his aura had changed somewhat. To be precise, a new strength had been added to his aura.

It wasn't unfamiliar. In fact, it was a familiar aura.

In-gong turned to Caitlin while Green Wind opened her mouth again,

"After eating the Moonlight Extract, Master and Caitlin were caught in a big light and exchanged life force. Just like Master and I, Master and Caitlin are also connected. Of course, it isn't quite like me."

In-gong nodded inadvertently. He definitely felt Caitlin in his aura and In-gong felt himself in Caitlin.

"Chris said that the closer the two of you were, the more vitality would be activated. If you hold her hand again, you will know."

There was no reason not to, so In-gong grabbed Caitlin's hand and he could see what Green Wind had said was true.

"Ohh."

He noticed it the moment he touched her hand. It wasn't just a simple feeling but a reaction. The flow of aura from the Moonlight Core became stronger like it had been influenced.

Chris seemed to know this which was why he had laid In-gong and Caitlin on the same bed.

"The others? Was anybody else injured?"

He gently lay down his hand, which was holding Caitlin's, to make it more comfortable. Green Wind shook her head.

"No. Master and Caitlin were the most badly injured. Chris is already up and limping around. Felicia cried a lot, but she wasn't hurt."

"I'm glad."

He didn't need to ask about Carack, Daphne, Karma and Delia.

Conquest Knight.

Famine Knight.

In-gong was reminded of Conquest, the white woman. She had said that In-gong was her only hope.

Had she been the one who brought In-gong to this world? Why had she picked In-gong? What was she looking for?

Of course, he didn't feel that resentful. If the white woman had really called him to this world, there would be many reasons. So, he didn't mind that much.

However, he put that on hold. He couldn't talk properly with the white woman, so it was useless to worry about it now.

'In a sense, it is also cool.'

There was a reason.

One day, he had opened his eyes in a game or game-like world. There had been a reason for In-gong to enter the world of Knight Saga.

Yet, he didn't know that reason yet. However, that didn't change the thought in his head that it was slightly cool.

'And...'

In-gong turned his gaze back to Caitlin. Although her complexion was a little pale, her face was very calm. The flow of aura he could feel through his hands was very smooth.

Things were changing after In-gong came into his world.

In-gong was going to stop the Day of Massacre. Of course, the biggest reason was In-gong's survival but that wasn't all.

After getting to know Chris and Caitlin, he wanted to prevent the lycanthrope subjugation. However, by blocking the Day of Massacre, he would also save Felicia and Daphne.

It was a story separate from the white woman, Conquest, War, Death and Famine. This was this and that was that.

In-gong didn't intend to allow the tragedy from Knight Saga to replay in the Demon World.

'The conclusion is the same.'

It was like his thoughts when he had first woken up in the world.

It was no different from the sword duke's and Chris' words.

He needed to be strong.

He would become strong enough to get rid of all the dangers that came. Then he would be able to solve all problems.

It might be an ignorant and simple idea, but it was true. It was just like the fight against Gerard. He was able to repel Gerard because he had raised his abilities steadily. If In-gong's power had been lacking even a little bit, a completely different result would have been created. Not only In-gong but Chris, Caitlin, Carack and all the others would have lost their lives.

In-gong put some strength into his right hand that was holding Caitlin and he smiled mischievously.

'Protagonist.'

Like a protagonist, he would become stronger. He would break the planned tragedy and make a happy ending.

"Master, what are you thinking? That expression is sneaky."

Green Wind asked with narrowed eyes. Just as a wishful thought passed through her head, someone came and visited.

“Oh, you’re awake?”

“Chris hyung.”

It was Chris who had showed up. He was wearing leather as always and Green Wind quickly disappeared.

Chris chuckled.

"She is really shy."

‘It’s not like that.’

Green Wind pleaded in a small voice, but In-gong spoke to Chris instead. He moved into a sitting posture and glanced at Chris.

“Is Hyung okay?”

"Of course. Are you really fine?"

Chris asked, sitting down on the chair next to the bed. Chris made the huge chair look cramped.

“Somewhat. I heard the story of the Moonlight Essence from Green Wind. Thank you.”

It was a herb that could only be obtained once in 100 years.

After In-gong’s words, Chris jumped up from his chair and ruffled In-gong’s head with a laugh.

“I wanted to thank you. I am alive because of you. And I also got to see the legend of the Moonlight Extract.”

Chris’ gaze shifted from In-gong to Caitlin. It was obvious he was referring to the Moonlight Core.

Chris leaned back in the chair and fixed his expression.



"It is unknown if Gerard is currently dead or alive."

"Unknown?"

The expression was somewhat ambiguous. Did he not simply escape?

Chris pressed a hand against his temple and responded,

"The tracking troops found parts of Gerard's lower and upper body. Like charcoal breaking down... It was like that."

In-gong recalled the last Lightning that had struck Gerard. At that time, his left shoulder had been shattered.

"He should be dead because his body below the waist was cut off, but... I can never be sure. I will continue the search until I am convinced that he is dead."

In-gong also agreed. He didn't think that Gerard was dead.

As In-gong's expression became serious, Chris laughed.

"Don't worry so much. He might have survived with no lower body, but what about the upper body? His left arm was entirely shattered. He will be in the worst condition. I've also prepared a way to deal with his strange technique."

He wasn't simply reassuring In-gong as his eyes were bloody. He seemed to have prepared something.

Chris changed the topic.

"Can I ask about the effects of the Moonlight Extract? Master Bruce said that you have the Moonlight Core and Caitlin has the Starlight Core."

"I don't know yet. It seems amazing though."

It had literally become a dual core. Perhaps the synergistic effects would be beyond imagination. The synergy wouldn't be  $1+1=2$  but maybe three or four.

'And...'

In-gong stared at Caitlin. There were a few times when he had wanted to experiment on with Caitlin. Hopefully, new training methods would be born.

"Hmm, okay. i am anticipating it."

Chris finished his story and stood up with a grin. He moved his gaze to a higher point as he hesitated for a moment.

"It seems to be that time."

"Time?"

What did that mean?

Chris stared straight at In-gong.

"Shutra, you will now meet someone. My advice, don't ever panic. Stay calm and you will amaze her."

"Chris hyung?"

"Come."

Chris stepped back and someone else entered for a visit. A sharp man wearing a military uniform opened the door. Instead of entering the room, he waited in the front of the door and a woman entered.

In-gong knew straight away who she was.

'The 4th Queen! Elaine Moonlight!'

Queen of the lycanthropes, Chris and Caitlin's mother!

Wearing a blue dress, she could literally be a version of Caitlin in her twenties. She looked exactly like Caitlin except that her hair was black like ebony and her body was very alluring.

Her face looked to be only in the mid-20s, so if she stood next to Caitlin, they would

seem more like siblings than mother and daughter.

As she walked over to the bed, she looked down at In-gong with Chris' blue eyes and In-gong realized why Caitlin had a cold look despite her pure nature. Elaine's expression was freezing cold itself.

"The 9th Prince, Shutra Agnus."

"Yes."

Elaine spoke and In-gong replied. Then she laughed like Chris and suddenly embraced In-gong.

"Thank you, it is because of you that Chris and Caitlin survived. If it hadn't been for you, it would have been a really big deal."

She didn't hold onto In-gong but tapped his back a few times before releasing him. She touched his cheek like he was her child and said,

"I've heard a lot about you from Chris and Caitlin. There are many impressive stories. It has been a long time since Caitlin has praised someone so much."

Her expression was cold but her tone was sweet. In-gong felt just as confused as the first time he met Caitlin.

Elaine in Knight Saga had literally been the enemy. She had been hostile to Zephyr and in the lycanthrope subjugation, she had been a blood-crazed beast that showed why she was the queen of the lycanthropes.

However, the Elaine in front of him was friendly.

"Thank you."

In-gong answered calmly. Elaine laughed like his gratitude was funny and went to stand next to Chris. She gazed at Caitlin who was sleeping while holding In-gong's hand and then turned to In-gong again.

"Okay, this is enough for a greeting, so I'll say it bluntly."

In-gong gazed at Chris with questioning eyes and he just gazed back. Elaine, sitting between the two of them, looked straight at In-gong.

"9th Prince Shutra Ignus, do you have any thoughts about becoming the demon king?"

This was the question from the queen of the lycanthropes.

In-gong's eyes widened as Elaine approached him. Instead of asking again, she waited for In-gong's answer.

# Chapter 83

## The Right To Rule #2

Demon king.

The first in the world. The ruler of the Demon World and the strongest person in the Demon World.

In-gong stared at Elaine with confused eyes and a faint smile appeared on Elaine's face.

"I guess you haven't thought about it before."

It was like that. It was the right answer.

It was Zephyr who had become the demon king in Knight Saga.

He wanted to confront Zephyr in order to prevent the Day of Massacre, but he had never thought of becoming the demon king. It was because Shutra's position was too low.

Elaine sat down beside In-gong and stared at him with a mixed expression. Then she said with a laugh,

"Well, it is understandable when considering your position so far."

9th Prince Shutra Ignus was known as the Scraps Prince.

He was a poor boy who had lost his mother, his biggest supporter, at a young age;

A poor prince who didn't receive any outside support.

"Now, your position has changed, so you should think about it."

Elaine spoke to In-gong in an alluring voice. Then In-gong realized a new fact,

'They don't look alike.'

She had almost the same face as Caitlin, but she was different. Elaine was a completely different type of person.

"I don't need to hear an answer right now. Once again, just think about it. I'll hear your answer later."

Elaine moved forward like a feline beast. She approached Caitlin, who was sleeping serenely, and touched her cheek.

"Sleep well, my baby."

Elaine bowed and kissed Caitlin's forehead. She lifted her head slowly and lingered her gaze on In-gong again.

She was cold and warm; there was some uncertainty buried her casualness.

Elaine turned toward the door before saying one last thing to In-gong,

"Take it easy. I'll see you again soon."

"Thank you."

In-gong's reply was somewhat misleading, but Elaine laughed heartily. She left as abruptly as she had appeared.

The man by the door closed it. A few seconds passed before Chris laughed.

Then he said,

"My advice?"

In-gong turned to Chris and realized that a person could be incredibly hateful. He snapped at Chris who was smiling mischievously.

"Why didn't you tell me that the 4th Queen was coming?"

"Then that would be no fun."

As expected, he received a hateful reply in return. Chris laughed like a villain and said again,

"Anyhow, you should really think about it. About becoming the demon king, that is."

He spoke lightly, but the expression in his eyes was serious. No, from the start, this had been a subject that couldn't be dealt with lightly.

Today had been the first time In-gong had encountered 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight. Regardless, it wasn't normal to ask someone if they wanted to become a demon king.

There were three possible reasons behind this.

Elaine was really casual, she was genuine or someone had evaluated In-gong for her.

In-gong thought it was the third reason. If it was the third reason, there was only one person it could be.

Chris Moonlight, the 4th Queen's eldest son and the one she trusted most in the world... The one who would be king of the lycanthropes and who was already walking on that path.

Elaine's question was soon asked by Chris who wondered if In-gong intended to become the demon king.

Chris liked jokes, but he would never make light of this. He wasn't the type of person who would ask In-gong this question casually.

Chris was hoping that In-gong would become the demon king.

In-gong took a step back in his mind and looked at this incident from far away.

In a common monarchy, it was treason for someone who wasn't the Crown Prince to think of becoming the king. Just saying that they wanted to become king would ignite a dangerous blaze.

However, the Demon World was different.

Since the beginning, there had never been such a thing as a fixed Crown Prince. The strongest royal child would become the demon king. There was no discrimination between man and woman or against age.

Therefore, it was natural for the children of the demon king to be encouraged.

However, this was somewhat distant from reality.

To become a demon king, they had to be the strongest and many things were required in order to become the strongest. Out of the royal children, there were only three who sincerely sought out to become the demon king:

1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros;

2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros;

And 4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion.

In Knight Saga, Chris hadn't been greedy about becoming the demon king. He was hostile and vigilant toward Zephyr, but he didn't engage actively in any faction rivalry.

Yet he was now asking about the demon king position.

In-gong breathed in deeply as he thought about it. He narrowed down his thoughts and asked Chris instead of replying to him,

"Why me?"

In-gong could guess to some extent, but he wanted to hear it from Chris.

Instead of answering right away, Chris straightened his posture. He was buried deep in the chair, but his size was so big that the chair seemed like it would burst.

Chris got into a comfortable position and smiled.

"Perhaps I am being too premature... and it is somewhat awkward to talk about."

Every person had a different way of talking. According to the situation and the person



he was talking to, Chris' tone would change.

He gave a long sigh. Instead of his normal mischievous expression, his face was calm like when he had been discussing the withdrawal from the Red Lightning tribe.

"I can't become the demon king but Shutra can."

Chris' words didn't end there. He raised his hand and concentrated aura on his fist. The blue aura seemed very cold.

"I am strong, a so-called genius."

It was obvious that he was speaking seriously.

Chris was a genius. At the age of 17, he had a strength comparable to that of the senior generals of the Demon King's Palace. His growth rate was indeed terrifying.

"However, it isn't overwhelming. At best, it is only a similar level to Silvan. I can't come close to 1st Prince Baikal in 10 years time. Not to mention the distance with 2nd Prince who can be described as a monster."

The 5th Prince Silvan Doomblade, Felicia's twin brother and prince of the dark elves, he was a genius comparable to Chris.

So was 1st Prince Baikal, who was good at both the sword and magic. Baikal was in the mid-twenties and it was said that he was comparable to the five captains.

Chris didn't mention it but 4th Princess Anastasia was also a genius in her area. If Felicia was a capable magician, Anastasia was a monster when it came to magic. There was a good reason why she led one of the three factions instead of her brother, 3rd Prince Victor.

Then there was 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros.

In Knight Saga, Zephyr had been powerful. Moreover, he had been the protagonist and had become strong at a tremendous speed.

However, the current Zephyr seemed stronger than the Zephyr of Knight Saga. Once he gathered all the stories he had heard indirectly, he was forced to come to such a

conclusion.

"The forces of the lycanthropes don't match with the draconians. The chances are slim that I will become the demon king when I am already falling behind in individual ability. It is better to stay still than to get involved in a struggle between factions."

That wasn't all; the lycanthropes had a political weakness. The existence of Caitlin Moonlight and the secret of her birth...

She was the reason why the lycanthropes didn't get involved in the politics of the Demon King's castle. Chris and Caitlin had proven they weren't interested in the throne by living at the palace of the lycanthropes instead of the Demon King's Palace.

Perhaps it was for Caitlin to some extent. Just like Shutra in the past, interest would be diminished once the person was out of sight.

"However, Shutra is different. You can catch up with 1st Prince and 2nd Prince."

Chris' blue eyes shone with eagerness. He sincerely believed that In-gong could surpass Baikal and Zephyr.

Only a few months after learning Aura, he had reached a level comparable to Caitlin. He had combined Divine Beast Authority and Sura Heart Law to create Divine Sura Authority and brought out the true efficacy of the Moonlight Extract.

Calling him a genius was lacking. He was a monster comparable to Zephyr, even the sword duke had expressed it.

"You can also get support from those other than the lycanthropes, unlike me."

The sword duke was already supporting him. There wasn't an official station, but the fact that the sword duke had taught him personally wasn't small.

"The dark elves are currently neutral. It was likely that they would have leaned towards the 4th Princess as time passed by, but you appeared. You captured Felicia's heart completely in just a few months."

Silvan and Felicia were like Chris and Caitlin. The moment he got Felicia's heart, he also got Silvan's.

In-gong was somewhat uncomfortable with the statement that he had gained Felicia's heart, but he couldn't deny it. It was unimaginable that Felicia would side with any of the other royal children over In-gong.

"The sponsorship of the sword duke. If you keep stacking up merits, you can pardon the gandharva who are now confined. Although they are in a state of collapse, they were a species that had once been able to build up a queen. Their power can't be ignored."

In-gong felt like he had been slapped in the back of the head.

Confined? Pardon?

Was that why he hadn't even seen one gandharva? What sin had been committed that the whole species had been confined?

This story seemed correct. It was the reason why there weren't any gandharva caring for Shutra.

If so, what had they done? When looking at the discussion of amnesty through merits, what type of crime could it be that, despite the crime, Shutra and the 5th Queen still maintained their status?

He had plenty of doubts. He needed to find out about the gandharva.

Chris sighed and took a sip of water from the glass on the table as though his throat was burning.

"I don't like 1st Prince, 2nd Prince and 4th Princess. But Shutra is different. I think the future where you become demon king is best for the lycanthrope species."

It wasn't simply because they were friends.

There was already a trusting and supportive relationship between In-gong and the lycanthropes after learning Divine Beast Authority.

In-gong also had none of his mother's family to rely on, so allying with the lycanthropes was beneficial to him.

Chris suddenly grinned. His face reverted to his usual friendly expression as he spoke,

"Well, you don't have to do anything right now. Just think about it. There is a big difference between thinking of it yourself and having someone suggest it to you."

Chris winked slightly and got up from his seat. Like Elaine, he approached Caitlin. He touched Caitlin, who was sleeping serenely, on the cheek and kissed her forehead.

"Think about Mother's words."

Chris said as he looked up and In-gong was reminded of Elaine.

They had the same eyes. Moreover, why was he looking this way after kissing Caitlin? There were many guesses and assumptions.

"Just a little bit longer. If you are hungry or if Caitlin wakes up, pull the line on this wall."

Chris instructed in a friendly tone before stepping out of the room. In-gong laughed for some unknown reason.

'Becoming the demon king.'

Chris' words were all true.

At first, In-gong had also been similar to Chris. In-gong hadn't thought that he would become the demon king.

However, things had changed. In some ways, it could have been decided from the beginning.

Zephyr was the strongest royal child. It was natural that someone stronger than Zephyr would become the demon king.

'It is like a mother having a friend's son who was the best, but she wants her son to become first in the nation.'

In-gong laughed at the analogy he came up with and nodded slowly.

His thoughts were simple. The advice was precious, but he had already come to a conclusion.

'Become strong.' Everything would be resolved if he became strong enough to be the demon king.

He would be able to stop the destruction of the lycanthropes and the Day of Massacre. It would also be possible to go against Famine, War and Death.

'Anyway, the goal of Knight Saga is to become the demon king.'

After summarizing his thoughts, In-gong gazed at the warmth of his right hand and Caitlin who was sleeping peacefully.

He couldn't express it, but he wanted to keep this.

In-gong was gazing at Caitlin with warm eyes when he heard Green Wind's voice in his ears.

"Master, you look sneaky."

The actualized form of Green Wind was now sitting on In-gong's thighs. In-gong narrowed his eyes at her.

"Do my eyes always look sneaky to you?"

Green Wind nodded with a bright face. He didn't know how to respond.

'Maybe it is retaliation for calling her Greenie.'

Without knowing why, In-gong suddenly wanted to see Carack.

"Your eyes are burning with ambition."

"Carack, you as well."

# Chapter 84

## The Right To Rule #3

"Your eyes are burning with ambition."

"Carack, you as well..."

In-gong grabbed his chest with a pained sound.

"Why are you pretending? Where is the pain?"

"I don't know if you are really good or bad."

Why was he so perceptive yet insensitive about things?

'He is the real protagonist.'

As always, In-gong couldn't help having this thought. Carack returned to looking after In-gong.

"Anyway, isn't your body better?"

There was a deep worry buried in his rough tone. In-gong knocked on his chest.

"I'm fine. Rather, I feel much better."

His words were genuine. Aura was the power of life, so strengthening his aura made his life force itself stronger.

"It is strange. If I had been asleep for four days, I should be starving."

"Ah, that reminds me. Why aren't I hungry?"

In-gong rubbed his belly reflexively. He only felt hard abs. Since the start, he hadn't been hungry.

Four days was a long time. When counting three meals a day, he had missed 12 meals, yet he wasn't starving.

Green Wind relieved In-gong and Carack's doubts.

"It is the effect of the Moonlight Extract. During your sleep over the last few days, you have been accepting the healing benefits of the Moonlight Extract."

As always, Green Wind appeared on In-gong's thighs. Now that Carack had become familiar with Green Wind, he asked In-gong with disbelief,

"Um, then you will keep not being hungry?"

"It isn't like that. Now that you're awake, you will become hungry again after a time."

Green Wind replied sincerely to what could be a frustrating question. Carack sighed with relief and cried out,

"Prince, I'm really glad. It would be a big problem if you lost the desire to eat."

If he wasn't hungry, he wouldn't want food and his pleasure in eating would disappear. It was a really scary thing to think about.

'Indeed, a genius orc.'

His way of thinking was definitely extraordinary.

In-gong admired him, then changing the topic.

"How is the lycanthropes' palace? Is it different from the Demon King's Palace?"

"Huh? This isn't the palace of the lycanthropes. It is like a house where the royalty stays."

Carack tilted his head with confusion. In-gong's gaze turned toward Green Wind.

"Greenie?"

It was obvious who he was calling, but Green Wind just avoided his gaze.

"Is Greenie here? Carack, do you know?"

Carack laughed instead of replying and Green Wind's gaze toward In-gong became colder. Green Wind opened her mouth and declared coldly,

"I thought it was a royal palace. You are a good Master, but I feel like Master has become a little bit spiteful these days."

Then she sneaked a peek at In-gong. She was the guardian that the centaurs and satyrs of Enger Plains prayed to, but he just thought she was cute.

"Well, it is similar."

In-gong turned away from Green Wind and asked Carack again,

"In the meantime, how have you been?"

"Prince and Princess were sleeping, so I was able to take a break. Karma is learning druid magic from Daphne while Prince Chris seems to be busy due to the person who ran away. Princess Felicia is staying in her room due to the lycanthrope nobles that came."

Karma hadn't just started learning druid magic from Daphne yesterday and it was natural that Chris was busy. However, he was somewhat nervous about Felicia.

"The lycanthrope nobles?"

"They seem to have come with Queen Elaine. Seira says that they are the queen's royal guards. Every one of them have an unusual red tattoo on their face."

Among the nobility, there were those who were part of Queen Elaine's royal guards.

They had red tattoos on their faces.

"The Blood Companions."

"Blood Companions?"



"That is what Seira called the 4th Queen's royal guards. They are scary."

In the lycanthrope subjugation, aside from Chris and Caitlin, the ones who dealt the most damage aside were the blood companions.

They consisted only of werewolves and all of them had some royal blood, regardless of whether it is thick or thin. Each one knew Divine Beast Authority and since they were trained with the aim of joining this unit, the connection between them was really great.

Carack shook his head at In-gong's explanation like it was ridiculous.

"Prince seems to know everything that others don't."

If Felicia was next to him, she would have nodded.

As though he suddenly had a thought, In-gong asked Carack,

"Did you ask about that?"

Although Caitlin was asleep, he didn't know what she or anyone else might overhear. Carack quickly noticed In-gong's intentions.

"If it is about that story, I asked Delia and Seira while I was resting."

He hadn't forgotten about what In-gong had told him previously at the Demon King's Palace. In-gong nodded with a satisfied expression.

"Okay, then tell me next time."

"Understood. By the way, what about Princess?"

Carack changed the subject naturally. In-gong gazed at the sleeping Caitlin and said,

"Fortunately, she seems to be okay."

He could still feel Caitlin's aura through their entwined hands. Just like In-gong, Caitlin had become healthier than before. He would have been worried about how long she

was sleeping, but Green Wind said it was the medicinal effect of Moonlight Extract.

“Will both of you really get better if you hold hands like that?”

“Yes.”

In-gong replied while fixing the position of Caitlin’s hand. Despite the fact that it was true, In-gong also thought that it was quite strange.

"Master, Princess seems to be waking up."

In-gong turned to Caitlin after hearing Green Wind’s voice. Caitlin was opening her eyelids slowly.

She stared at the ceiling blankly for a moment before smiling.

“Shu... tra?”

Her voice was hoarse from being asleep for so long, but there didn’t seem to be any abnormalities. In-gong smiled and replied,

“It is all over. Gerard has been defeated and everyone is safe.”

He told her the most important things. Caitlin was relieved and stretched her body. Then her eyes flashed and a very embarrassed expression formed on her face. In-gong realized why and hurriedly reassured her,

"Focus on your aura. Thanks to the Moonlight Extract, both Noona and I have gained a new power."

Chris and Caitlin were geniuses and sensitive to the flow of aura. It was obvious that she would be surprised at her aura which was suddenly different.

Caitlin closed her eyes after In-gong spoke and focused on her aura. A dark blue light rose from Caitlin’s entire body.

After a minute or so, Caitlin’s eyes glowed as she opened them again. In-gong playfully poured a little bit of his aura into their joined hands.

“How is it?”

Naturally, Caitlin would have noticed the Starlight Core inside her as well as In-gong.

Indeed, Caitlin laughed brightly like the moon. She exclaimed with her distinctive shining eyes,

“Great!”

In-gong and Caitlin sat facing each other on the bed. After sitting up straight, the two of them held each other’s hands and closed their eyes, breathing deeply.

In-gong increased the level of Divine Sura Authority from three to five before circulating his aura. He had to use all the newly acquired skill points gained from defeating Gerard, but it was worth it.

A white aura rose from In-gong’s body. In-gong circulated his aura in the usual way, then the stream of aura from the Moonlight Core joined the cycle naturally.

The amount of aura hadn’t increased much. However, In-gong was able to manipulate his aura more freely. The pathways for the aura were wider and deeper, allowing the auras from the two hearts to flow faster than before. This also meant a stronger explosive force.

However, this wasn’t the end. The present change was only when In-gong was alone.

Right now, Caitlin was in front of him.

The Moonlight Core responded to the Starlight Core in Caitlin. The two auras unconsciously started to become one.

Caitlin’s dark blue aura headed to In-gong and In-gong’s white aura wrapped around Caitlin.

It wasn’t about two hearts now but four hearts.

If he had to name it, it would be a quad-core.

There was no backlash despite the fact that different auras were being mixed together. After receiving Caitlin's aura, he felt the depths of Divine Beast Authority and Divine Sura Authority increasing.

After accepting In-gong's aura, Caitlin started acquiring Divine Sura Authority that In-gong hadn't found a way to teach.

The two of them couldn't help smiling. The mixture of the white and dark blue auras started circulating vigorously from the quad-core.

Their auras were getting stronger and their aura growth rate was much faster and better than before.

In-gong and Caitlin felt great joy; it was a type of pleasure.

"I don't know but it seems to be great."

One hour had passed since In-gong and Caitlin started circulating their aura. Carack spoke while popping foods that digested well into his mouth and Green Wind watched the two people with a relaxed expression.

"It is the power of beautiful life."

Daphne and Karma nodded and agreed with Green Wind's words. The two druids could feel the power of life that was the essence of aura.

Everyone was pleased and full of admiration, but there was one person who complained.

"It is good, but do they need to practice as soon as they wake up?"

Felicia muttered, frowning. She had come to see both of them after hearing that they had woken up, but she couldn't even say a word.

It seemed good that both of them were smiling while training, but she couldn't help feeling upset.

"It is a good thing, Princess. And this is delicious. It is great cooking."

Felicia smiled as Carack praised the porridge that she made but sighed and gave up.

Some time passed by and just as everyone but Green Wind was thinking about going back...

"I expected it, but it is even more amazing."

It was Chris who had appeared at the door. He had appeared without any aides and turned to Felicia.

"How long has it been since they went into this state?"

"Roughly two hours."

It was Carack who replied since he had been there since the beginning.

"Really? Then I should stop them."

"Huh? Can you do it? Isn't it bad to break the aura when they are training like this?"

Felicia was aghast and grabbed Chris' hand to stop him, but he shook his head and replied,

"There is a way to break it naturally. You don't have to worry."

Moreover, Divine Beast Authority was something that could be practiced while walking, running and so on. If their aura was disrupted by being disturbed suddenly, it would be troublesome.

After reassuring Felicia, Chris raised his blue aura and struck In-gong and Caitlin's hands. Once Chris' enormous power emerged, Felicia and everyone else had to realize Chris' presence. It was the same for In-gong and Caitlin as well.

The aura around In-gong and Caitlin gradually weakened. The white and dark blue auras split apart and faded like they were scattered by the wind.

In-gong and Caitlin woke up at the same time. Chris greeted them with a large smile.

"Have you regained your consciousness?"

"Oppa!"

Caitlin stood up and rushed to Chris. Chris laughed as she hugged and babbled at him.

"You both had an amazing experience."

Caitlin nodded from Chris' arms and In-gong also smiled in agreement. Chris put Caitlin down and said,

"Now, both of you are conscious, so you should say something to Noonim. She has been sulking."

Felicia's eyes widened at Chris' words. It was because Caitlin then dragged Felicia into a hug.

Felicia struggled for a bit, but Caitlin won eventually. In-gong told Felicia,

"I'm glad you're safe."

"Don't speak nonsense."

Felicia wanted to say more but she didn't. Instead of teasing Felicia as usual, Chris gathered all eyes toward him again.

"This is a good sight, but I don't have much time. I'll tell you straight away."

"What... is it?"

Felicia asked Chris in a tense and nervous voice.

Chris responded with a somewhat relaxed look.

"I am going back to the palace with the other lycanthropes today. It seems like we will be busy for a while."

In fact, that answer had been expected to some extent. Although he was close to death, Gerard's death was still uncertain. The question of who helped Gerard break out also

needed to be addressed and the 4th Queen couldn't leave the palace empty for too long.

Chris told In-gong,

"Once you meet Amita, return to the palace. Shouldn't we meet before you return to the Demon King's Palace? I will also hear the answer to the proposal then."

Felicia's eyes narrowed at the suggestion, but In-gong simply nodded.

"And Caitlin,"

Chris pointed at Caitlin. He gazed at Caitlin, who was still hugging Felicia, and declared,

"You should go with Shutra."

"Eh?"

"I'm convinced after what I just saw. Right now, you need Shutra more than me. Additionally, you and Shutra are both stronger now."

There was a variable in place called the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core. Furthermore, this was the territory of the lycanthropes, not the Demon King's Palace. So, he didn't need to hold Caitlin in his arms.

However, it was clear that Chris and Caitlin were unfamiliar with this. Since she had been born, Caitlin had always gone with Chris no matter where he went.

It had been a different story when they went to look for the Thunder Light Anvil. This wouldn't be one or two days but at least a fortnight spent apart.

Caitlin hesitated to reply and Chris patted her head.

"It is just this time. You don't have to worry."

"Eung."

Caitlin nodded. Chris laughed and looked back at In-gong.

"Shutra, take care of Caitlin."

"I understand, Hyung Leave it to me."

In-gong knocked on his chest. Then Felicia, who had been watching the series of conversations, protested loudly,

"Hey, shouldn't you be asking me that instead of Shutra?"

Among the children of the demon king who were present, Felicia was the oldest.

Chris nodded with a serious expression and spoke to In-gong again,

"Shutra, look after Felicia noonim as well. Really, please."

"Yes, Hyung."

"Hey!"

Felicia protested at In-gong's earnest answer and Caitlin quickly bit her lip to stop from laughing.



# Chapter 85

## The Right To Rule #4

The carriage was moving.

It was a huge carriage drawn by six horses but only two people were inside.

Elaine Moonlight, queen of the lycanthropes and the demon king's 4th queen, and her younger cousin, Ludwig, leader of the Blood Companions.

Elaine's expression was very calm as she stared out the window. Ludwig asked without knowing,

"Is it okay to not be there when she wakes up?"

There was no need to ask about who he was talking about. Elaine, who turned and saw the impatience and resentment on Ludwig's face, closed her eyes like she was enjoying the sunshine.

"You've already checked on her several times now. I waited to the limit, but Caitlin was a little late this time. It is unfortunate."

'Would she be awake by now? It would have been really nice if I could have seen her awake.'

In contrast to her rigid words, Elaine's voice was full of uneasiness. Ludwig couldn't understand Elaine, his lord and cousin. It wouldn't have been a big deal if she had waited a few more hours.

Elaine opened her eyes and spoke with a mischievous smile that resembled Chris.

"Can you tell me the story now? I originally planned to start after returning to the palace."

The task of Ludwig, leader of the Blood Companions, wasn't just to be Elaine's escort.

He served simultaneously as Elaine's secretary and adviser and always had to be mindful of the three roles that he played.

"I've found the body of the fake Gerard in the east. It is obviously a lycanthrope but everything else is unknown. As expected, he killed himself."

He used suicide after all avenues of escape disappeared.

It was the most extreme and effective way to prevent information from leaking.

Elaine pressed a hand to her temple and said,

"Regardless of whether it is the fake's own capacity or a magic weapon from support forces, the fake Gerard has shown enough power to turn our attention to him. Moreover, he committed suicide after being caught. This is obvious, but there has to be a big organization behind this."

It wasn't inside the lycanthrope kingdom. The organization intervening was clearly from the outside.

Elaine bit her lip before turning her head abruptly. Her trustworthy and handsome cousin, who had all the female maids at the palace pining after him, had a dog-like expression on his face.

"Why? Do you want to say something?"

"How have they known about him?"

Ludwig was more curious about that than the identity of the external forces.

How had they found out? The fact that Gerard had been trapped in the lowest level of the Grey Tower was a secret.

"The information that Gerard was in the lowest level of the Grey Tower was top secret. It has been a secret for over 20 years."

Even those in the Grey Tower were unaware that Gerard had been there.

The secret had been perfect and no leaks had existed.

However, Elaine didn't think so. She leaned on the window and shook her head gently.

"Hundreds of people died due to Gerard. It happened overnight and occurred inside the palace, but... there was a crowd. There is no perfect secret in this world. One day, it would be discovered."

In the end, she seemed to be talking more to herself, than to Ludwig.

Elaine's expression was detached, but Ludwig was different. He remembered Caitlin and had to clench his teeth to stop the words from coming out.

Elaine laughed. She returned her cousin's thoughts to the original story.

"They wouldn't have freed Gerard for no reason. It would benefit them to harm the lycanthropes, but he kept his mind after being freed. Why did they let Gerard go and do his own thing?"

The most valuable use of Gerard was the fact that he was the former heir to the lycanthrope throne as well as Elaine's brother.

They could use Gerard to cause confusion about the legitimacy of succession.

Yet none of those things seemed to be happening. Moreover, they didn't control Gerard after he escaped. Perhaps, the organization had set Gerard's actions into motion, but Elaine's female intuition didn't think that was the case.

Ludwig was much simpler.

"I feel that Gerard is alive."

Disregarding the relationship with the external force, the fact that Gerard had fled was uncomfortable.

Elaine nodded.

"He is really tough. He survived 20 years ago as well. I should have killed him at that time, but I fell into my bad habit."

Ludwig once again thought that he had made a mistake. So, this time, he was the one who changed the topic.

“What do you think of 9th Prince?”

The switch was sudden, but Elaine just smiled. She knew why her loyal royal guard had changed the subject.

"Do you like him? I was quite surprised since I had seen him once before. At that time... how should I say it? I almost felt like he had no soul. Well, that was in the old days."

It had been 7 years since she had last seen him. It had been a difficult time for the 9th Prince. Maybe Elaine had been mistaken.

Elaine touched her chin and nodded.

"Ludwig, you saw him. What are your thoughts?"

Ludwig had been watching In-gong and Elaine while they had been talking. Regardless of how much Chris trusted the 9th Prince, it was absurd to let the defenseless Caitlin stay there with no supervision.

"I don't know what I saw, but..."

"But?"

Ludwig mumbled with a somewhat embarrassed face.

"It seems like he really cares about Chris and Caitlin."

He had seen it when In-gong looked at Caitlin.

Elaine laughed at her cousin's reply. It was just like Chris' laugh.

"That isn't what I'm talking about. Do you think he can really become the demon king?"

"He isn't a lycanthrope. I don't want to be hit in the back of the head."

Despite all of this, 9th Prince was still an outsider. It was like letting someone else

inside the cuckoo's nest where babies had just been born.

Ludwig realized that his posture was uncomfortable and fixed it. Elaine was still smiling when he turned to face her and asked,

"Does Queen really think that 9th Prince can become the demon king?"

"Chris thinks so. So, I think so as well."

"Your Majesty."

Instead of responding, Elaine stretched out a hand toward Ludwig. He sighed and pulled out a metal box containing cigarettes. Elaine received the cigarette with a satisfied expression and lit it up with magic. She then said,

"I know the demon king. I don't think I know all of him, but there is something I am sure about."

The demon king, Mitra...

King of the sura and the strongest person in the Demon World.

"There is always a reason for his behaviour and that reason is far from his emotions."

Elaine stopped talking as she inhaled the smoke again. She remembered when she had last been with him, a few years ago.

"He isn't someone who would disrupt the court gathering twice for no reason. He must have seen something in 9th Prince that we couldn't see."

No, she had probably seen it. She didn't know what it was, but she had clearly seen something.

Ludwig shook his head like it was ridiculous.

"They are still father and son, so we still don't know. His attitude towards his children might have changed as he aged.

A father calling the name of his son wasn't that special. If the unlikely son suddenly

showed some potential, it was natural for his parents to cheer him on.

Elaine stared at Ludwig with a bemused expression and laughed.

"You have always liked children. You played well with Chris and Caitlin when they were young."

"The two of them are still young."

Ludwig said stiffly. Elaine pinched her cousin's cheek and said,

"The demon king isn't like that. He is a monster of rationality. It is obvious that there is emotion, but it works differently from us."

Elaine put out her cigarette. She looked up reflexively at Ludwig and asked,

"Among the children of the demon king... Yes, for example, if Zephyr became strong enough to kill the demon king and inherit the throne, what do you think the demon king will say before he is killed?

"This bastard? Are you immoral? Won't you be cursed?"

Ludwig spoke directly and Elaine laughed again. Then Ludwig muttered with a red face,

"That is a common reaction."

"Yes, it is common. However, the demon king's reaction would probably be uncommon. He would probably be pleased at the birth of a demon king more powerful than himself. He is that type of person."

The strongest man in the Demon World who had ascended to the position of demon king...

Anyone strong enough to defeat him deserved to gain the position of demon king.

Ludwig looked like it was strange and Elaine nodded.

"It is like that. Chris can't become demon king, so I am thinking of supporting 9th

Prince.”

He was someone who the demon king found special. He had caused the demon king to take such actions.

"But as you know, the demon king has a few more wives and they probably know the demon king as well as I do. The 3rd Queen... I wonder about Sylvia's reaction. She might get on the same carriage as us."

The princess of the dark elves, Sylvia Doomblade, didn't belong to any of the factions. Just like her children Silvan and Felicia, she was known for avoiding involvement in all matters related to the demon king.

However, it wasn't because the dark elves were weak. She was like the previous Elaine — she simply didn't want to take the risk on a low gamble.

It was the same with Ludwig.

"I don't think it is too bad to take a step back."

"That might be the case. Maybe I am taking a risk, but I believe the future in which the 9th Prince becomes the demon king is the best for us."

This was because it was impossible to establish a good relationship with any of the other demon king candidates.

Elaine looked out the window again. She gazed at a distant place and recalled Caitlin. She whispered in a slight voice,

"The Demon World is a world of the strong... Eventually, everything will go according to the will of the strongest. I also like this fact."

The carriage moved forward. The palace of the lycanthropes wasn't far away.

The afternoon that In-gong and Caitlin woke up, Chris left the royal house and headed to the palace.

And the next morning, In-gong also left the house with his party. The direction was the opposite of the one that Chris headed in.

They travelled together with lycanthrope soldiers until they passed the lycanthropes' territory. Once outside the territory, only one lycanthrope ranger joined as a guide.

His name was Robin and he was a wild boar lycanthrope. Robin was a competent ranger who had almost all of the western area's terrain in his head. He was also the male companion who would help restore the gender balance of In-gong's group after Caitlin and Seira joined.

'There is something wrong.'

While the male to female ratio was extremely unbalanced, this was common to see in novels, cartoons, movies, games, animations and so on. However, the most popular person wasn't the protagonist but the person next to him.

Carack was sitting talking to Karma and Daphne while occasionally looking into Seira's and Delia's eyes. In-gong then turned his attention to Caitlin and Felicia. The two of them were sleeping on each other, in a loving display of a sibling relationship.

A warm smile formed involuntarily on his face as he gazed at the two of them, then he touched the seat of the carriage he was riding. Chris had given them a carriage that was very big, durable and cozy.

'Maybach would be good right now.'

He had left the draco at the Demon King's Palace. If he had known that they would keep moving after Thunderdoom Fortress, In-gong would've brought him.

In-gong finally glanced at Robin who was sitting next to Seira. He looked uncomfortable about sitting in the carriage and opened up awkwardly when he felt In-gong's gaze on him.

"Once we reach the Twin Bridge, we'll have to get down from the carriage and walk. 9th Prince should rest right now."

"I've been sleeping too much over the last few days. What about Spider Forest? Have you been there before?"



He really didn't feel like sleeping.

Robin nodded to In-gong's question and replied,

"I was there six months ago. My overall impression is that it is very calm. It is a very peaceful place because there are no beasts or monsters nearby. It is a little bit different if we enter deep into Spider Forest... but the area near the road will be smooth."

It was quite a good story. Even in In-gong's memory, Spider Forest hadn't had have any events. It was a peaceful land without any monsters or incidents.

'A peaceful place.'

Then three days later, the party arrived at Spider Forest to hear the cries of beasts, the roars of monsters and a terrible aura covering the whole forest.

Robin was greatly confused but the rest of the party was different. Carack gazed at In-gong and he looked back with the same expression.

"W-why?"

In-gong stuttered and Carack gave a long sigh. Felicia laughed bitterly like she had expected it.

Caitlin held In-gong's hand and spoke in a warm voice like she was trying to comfort him, instead of condemn him.

"Shutra is indeed amazing."

Was this a comfort or an instant kill?

In-gong stared at the Spider Forest.

# Chapter 86

## The Last Flame

They smiled like it was a joke, but the situation wasn't that relaxing.

Carack grabbed Robin with a serious expression and asked,

"It is a situation that's different from the usual?"

"That's correct. I've never seen Spider Forest look this way."

Robin spoke politely to Carack as he had done throughout the journey as Carack was an orc who was shockingly informal when talking to the prince and princess. The armour he wore was so great that Robin mistook him for someone with a noble status.

Seira added,

"Are there any regular patrols in this area?"

The lycanthrope rangers patrolled the outskirts of the lycanthrope area at regular intervals, so Robin nodded.

"It isn't everyday, but the rangers will pass by here once a month."

"When was the last time the rangers passed by here?"

This time it was Delia who asked.

Robin counted the date in his head and stuttered,

"Eh... We can't reach the rangers headquarters unless we pass Spider Forest... Considering the amount of time it takes to move and the last time the rangers have been here, it should be 10 days to a fortnight."

A fortnight was definitely not a short period. However, it was too short to change the

distribution of animals in certain areas.

"This is a recent change. It is abrupt."

Felicia muttered and looked around again. She could feel a powerful energy even without focusing on the flow of magic.

As Robin had said, if there had been no big changes until 10 days ago, then it had to be a coincidence that their visit coincided with the changes in Spider Forest.

Carack asked with a serious expression,

"Don't worry. Can we really blame Prince? This is Prince's trademark."

In-gong couldn't sense the difference, but Carack seemed to think it was good. Carack nodded with a laugh while In-gong looked at Daphne. She was a druid and a dryad, so she would be most sensitive to these kind of changes.

While the party was exchanging stories, she closed her eyes and tried to communicate with the surrounding spirits. Then she spoke with a pale face,

"The surrounding spirits are very afraid. It is more about fear for the future than a sudden change in circumstances."

Daphne looked at Karma and Karma nodded as well.

"Fear is mixed in with the cries of the beasts. It isn't just a threatening cry. Some are terrified."

Intermittent roars could be heard from the depths of the forest. He didn't know if they were fighting each other, but maybe there truly was a different cause.

Everyone's expressions became serious. Felicia turned to In-gong and asked,

"The person called Amita, are they strong?"

Although she knew they were unusual because they were a friend of the sword duke, she couldn't help feeling uneasy.

In-gong was also forced to give an uncertain answer,

"Let's hope so."

In Knight Saga, Amita had always appeared with a difference appearance. In the past, Amita had appeared as a big man who looked strong but also a thin woman and a cute little boy.

Right now, he had Caitlin as an example, so it was impossible to evaluate attack power based on appearance alone. In the end, it was impossible to guess how much strength, skill and abilities Amita had.

"They have lived for a long time, but that isn't unconditional.

Moreover, there was a law that prevented the existence of a great craftsmen and great warrior in one individual.

While In-gong and Felicia had a silent conversation, Caitlin, who had been listening quietly, opened her mouth.

"Shutra, this is outside the lycanthrope territory, but it isn't that far. I think that it would be a good idea to ask for support, rather than try to resolve it ourselves."

Although she was quite curious about Amita, she was a princess of the lycanthropes.

Felicia nodded in agreement to her statement.

However, there was someone who opposed this.

"It is too late."

It was Green Wind. Robin was amazed by her sudden appearance. However, the party had already seen Green Wind several times, so they were more interested in her words.

Carack asked first,

"It is too late. What does that mean?"

Instead of answering, Green Wind just frowned slightly. However, it wasn't because she wasn't offended by Carack's question but because the energy around Spider Forest was having a detrimental effect on her.

Green Wind hugged herself and looked at In-gong.

"I can feel the power of the guardian. It is very weak. The spirits are just afraid of the monsters. They are afraid that the guardian of Spider Forest will disappear."

It was Green Wind, the guardian of Enger Plains, who was saying this. Felicia asked Robin hurriedly,

"Robin, does Spider Forest have a guardian? A guardian that protects the area."

Caitlin didn't know a lot about the outside territory, so she didn't know much about Spider Forest.

Robin searched through his memories with a confused expression before clapping his hands.

"There is a story of a spider spirit. It is a story about a giant spider living in the center of Spider Forest."

There was no such thing as proper faith.

In-gong nodded thoughtfully. Nothing special had occurred at Spider Forest in Knight Saga. Moreover, there were no tribes living nearby, so the situation was different from Green Wind who was worshiped by the centaurs and satyrs.

Regardless, Green Wind had said it, so the existence of the guardian was certain.

Carack asked Green Wind,

"Anyway, what will happen if the guardian spirit disappears?"

Carack's question pulled at the core of the story. Green Wind seemed to find it difficult to answer and Felicia suddenly opened her mouth,

"If the guardian disappears, it is a problem. But how does it disappear?"

Everyone's gazes moved toward Felicia. She raised her index finger and explained,

"There are two main ways that a guardian can disappear. One is that the guardian spirit itself is destroyed while the other is that the source of the spirit is destroyed."

In-gong was reminded of the small temple on Enger Plains. Green Wind had said that Enger Plains would lose its colours and revert back if she disappeared.

Felicia presented the answer like she had read In-gong's mind.

"Green Wind is a higher ranked guardian. So, even if the source disappears, she won't. Her strength is likely to just weaken."

Karma had a heartbroken look on her face at those words, but no one witnessed it.

Green Wind just shrugged in response.

"Hmm, hmm."

'Now, you know. Master should take care of me more,' was what her expression seemed to be saying.

In-gong looked away from Green Wind and shifted toward Felicia, who laughed and continued her explanation,

"But most guardians are destroyed when the source is. Most of them are cases that I have encountered before in ruins or dungeons."

Since Felicia had many experiences exploring ruins, no one expressed any disagreement.

Caitlin frowned and asked,

"Unni, are you saying that the guardian of Spider Forest is weakened due to the source itself being hit?"

"Perhaps."

"It is accurate. I also think so."

Green Wind nodded with a serious expression and spread her arms wide open.

"This is the first time I've come here. The spirits are confused and frightened and they can't communicate properly, but I can feel it. There is powerful magic in the center of that forest. Once the magic is destroyed, a big change will take place in the neighbourhood."

"Like Enger Plains?"

In-gong asked reflexively and Green Wind nodded.

"Master broke through the crisis on Enger Plains, but that would have been the case if Master hadn't appeared. Enger Plains would have been turned into a desert. I don't know what magic is in the center of the forest, but if it is similar to Enger Plains, the area may become a desert or wilderness."

Robin's face became speculative when he heard the word 'desert'. Green Wind continued to speak,

"There isn't enough time to call for support from somewhere else. The power of the guardian spirit is too weak. If we wait for support, we might miss the timing."

It had taken In-gong's group a few days to reach Spider Forest. However, when considering the round distance travel, it would take at least three days for support to arrive.

In-gong stared at Spider Forest. Firstly, they had to confirm the identity of the enemy.

"On Enger Plains, the monsters of the Northern Limit Line came down directly. What monsters are gathered in the forest to attack the guardian?"

"I don't know the answer to that. Maybe something like a powerful curse is weakening the guardian."

"In the end, we have to go into the center of the forest."

Outside the forest, they couldn't do anything other than guess.

In-gong was reminded of the Death Knight. If this was a repeat of what had happened on Enger Plains, then it was likely that the Death Knight was involved.

‘The purple aura.’

It had been wrapped around the monsters in the north. Additionally, the man with the spear had a blue aura which contained a power of death that was one step higher.

"E-excuse me."

Karma interrupted suddenly, raising her hand slightly when In-gong glanced at her.

"I know we don't have time, but I think it will be hard to explore the forest right now."

Her words were correct. There was a clear basis for them and Daphne agreed with Karma's words.

"Your Highness, the spirits are afraid of the night. It is clear that something will happen at night."

Green Wind nodded to confirm it.

Felicia bit her lip and asked,

"Can we get to the center before that?"

"We won't arrive that quickly. It is already late afternoon."

Carack pointed to the sky; the sun was close to the west.

"Okay, then we will set up camp nearby. We will put off going into the forest until tomorrow morning."

Although In-gong was responsible for Thunderdoom Fortress, Felicia was in charge of the visit to Spider Forest.

"The most important things are our lives. We shouldn't run away, but it isn't worth doubling the risk."



It was true that she wanted to meet Amita. As a child of the demon king, she had no desire to leave the forest.

However, the lives of In-gong and Caitlin were more precious. Felicia made a clear statement, then asked In-gong,

"Shutra, can I give Karma some work?"

In-gong turned to Karma and Karma immediately responded to his gaze,

"I will follow your words."

In-gong looked back at Felicia. She accepted it as permission and told Karma,

"It is important to inform the lycanthropes of the current situation. Robin has to guide us in Spider Forest, so Karma will tell them the news. I believe in your quick feet and strong heart."

"I understand."

Karma replied with a determined expression. Felicia smiled and tried to relax.

"I'll write you a letter, so just wait a moment. Does Green Wind agree with camping?"

"Understood."

"Yes, I agree. I am sorry for the guardian of this land, but Master is more precious."

Green Wind scattered back to wind. After a rough plan was set, Robin and his group started moving again.

Then Caitlin grabbed In-gong's hand and stared straight into In-gong's eyes.

"It isn't because of Shutra."

This wasn't happening because of In-gong; he was just involved in the incident.

"And on the contrary, can't this crisis be resolved because Shutra has come here?"

Caitlin smiled so brightly that In-gong couldn't help smiling back. He was thankful to Caitlin.

"Um, I think so as well."

Carack laughed as he listened to the conversation. In-gong also laughed and patted Carack's chest.

"Well, it is like this."

"Good luck."

Carack went to say goodbye to Karma who was preparing to go a long way.

Then a few hours later.

Night came to Spider Forest.

# Chapter 87

## The Last Flame #2

The party set up camp under a hill near Spider Forest.

They were now pros at camping; Carack set up the fire and scouted around with Robin, while Daphne prepared water for the party.

In-gong had nothing to do with setting up the camp, so he sat down next to Caitlin in order to practice aura.

In-gong and Caitlin sat facing each other like they had done in the lycanthrope house and grabbed both hands. They were able to get to the quad-core state after closing their eyes because they had already learnt the trick.

The previous quad-core had simply been a big, strong flow of aura. However, it was different this time. Caitlin led In-gong and In-gong pushed Caitlin; Caitlin's knowledge of Divine Beast Authority led Divine Sura Authority to a higher level.

In order to ensure proper aura training, the technical part should be carried out in parallel. Therefore, when In-gong first learnt Divine Beast Authority, he mainly focused on the technical elements.

He had to do that this time but couldn't stop the aura training. This was just the beginning, but the feeling of the two auras uniting caused a great sense of accomplishment.

Once again, In-gong and Caitlin forgot about the time. One hour and then another hour. Then it lasted for another hour after the party finished eating together.

The air was cold.

As In-gong experienced the change in temperature and started to feel other things, his consciousness woke up.

He wasn't sure, but it seemed like some time had passed. As In-gong's aura slowed, Caitlin responded to it. The two people quickly released their quad-cores and opened their eyes slowly.

It was a twilight world. Instead of the orange of sunset, purple light that was turning black filled the sky. Moreover, the night was being pushed. The darkness was soon filled with a purple energy.

It was a strange feeling. When he thought about it, he barely remembered witnessing the time when day and night turned around. Was it normal for day and night to change this way?

In-gong raised his head and stared at the night sky. Both eyes naturally looked for the moon in the darkness.

In-gong once again felt a sense of incongruity.

"Green?"

The distorted moon was shining green. It seemed like an intense poison that would make the world melt.

Additionally, there were no stars. At that moment, In-gong lowered his gaze and looked before him.

Caitlin was standing while staring up at the night sky. However, she was a little strange. Her mouth was open and her eyes were blinking like she had been drugged.

Caitlin also looked down at In-gong. Suddenly, she groaned and pushed strength into both hands.

"Kuhang!"

She let out an incredible wolf-like roar. In-gong tried reflexively to restrain Caitlin, but it wasn't easy. As a mix between a lycanthrope and sura, she didn't have a beast form but contained the unique strength of a lycanthrope. Moreover, she was a powerful aura user, so her physical abilities were different.

Due to that, In-gong couldn't restrain Caitlin's power-

'Eh?'

In-gong glanced down at his two arms. Caitlin was captured by his arms and couldn't move. Of course, In-gong was shaking as he tried to endure her strength, but he wasn't being pushed.

In-gong was applying force to Caitlin. She tried to resist his power, but she gradually began to be pushed back.

'Did I gain more strength?'

It was like that; In-gong was stronger than Caitlin. He hadn't realized it because he was getting stronger progressively. Additionally, there had also been the bonuses from levelling up.

In-gong was over level 20, so his strength had exceeded 80 points. It was much higher than his other stats because he had invested additional points. If he had over 80 points in strength, that meant he was at least eight times stronger than Villager A. It was a terrifying force.

Caitlin was still struggling, but she then collapsed and In-gong quickly took the mount position on top of her. He held down her two legs, so Caitlin was really stuck.

"Noona! Steady yourself! Noona!"

Caitlin howled instead of answering. It wasn't just a roar, but it sounded like she was crying out to something.

Why had this change suddenly happened? In-gong turned his head reflexively. Things were happening behind him.

"Seira! I am Carack!"

Carack said hurriedly to Seira who was growling in her beast form. He walked slowly toward her with his arms wide open like he was harmless.

"Calm down, please calm down. Can't you recognize me?"

Carack smiled awkwardly. Seira gazed at Carack's face and kicked his groin.

"Keook!"

Carack sank from the strong blow. Robin, who was crazy like Seira, had picked up a sword and was pointing it at Delia. It was impossible to suppress the crazy lycanthropes with simply force.

In-gong also felt that way. At that moment, Felicia shouted,

"Close your eyes!"

In-gong didn't understand, but he just believed in Felicia. Instead of asking questions, he immediately closed his eyes.

"Flash!"

Felicia shouted again. A bright light emerged from her two hands and swept away the darkness around her. It was such a strong light that even Felicia didn't dare open her eyes.

"Kiaack!"

Seira and Robin screamed at the same time. The two people temporarily lost their sight and fell down. Then Felicia took back the magic light and quickly cast a second spell.

"Bind!"

A magical rope tied up Seira and Robin. However, it was just a temporary measure as the rope couldn't hold out long against their strength. Felicia frowned and ordered Carack and Delia,

"Cover their eyes. It will calm them down a little bit!"

Seira and Robin weren't beasts, but they had lost control in their beast form, so beasts taming methods seemed to fit them.

Carack seized Seira from behind and covered her eyes with his palms while Delia tied

a handkerchief around Robin's eyes.

It seemed to be working as their movements calmed slightly. This time Daphne was the one who shouted.

"They are spirits of insanity! Be careful not to get affected as well!"

As soon as she said it, she closed her eyes and started to chant a spell. It was to drive away the spirits of insanity possessing Seira and Robin.

In-gong finally roughly understood the situation. He turned toward Caitlin who was still beneath him and shouted,

"Green Wind!"

"I will try it!"

Green Wind understood In-gong's meaning and used her strength. A green wind started gently revolving around Caitlin's head.

Fortunately, it seemed to work. Caitlin's power weakened gradually and she no longer cried out. She closed her eyes and didn't move.

"Are they calm?"

In-gong looked behind him. Like Caitlin, Seira and Robin were also collapsed and unmoving.

"Sleep."

Felicia headed to In-gong's side after putting the two people to sleep with magic. The sleep magic was also used on Caitlin.

Whether it was due to using so much magic in succession or surprise at the situation itself, Felicia's breathing was rough as though she was going to vomit. In-gong suddenly glanced around. He noticed something that he had failed to see previously due to the sudden situation.

The party was now in a forest. Despite the fact that they had camped under a hill

outside the forest, there were trees surrounding them.

What was going on? Had a space jump magic been activated?

In-gong looked up at the green moon. The beginning of all this was the rising of this green moon.

The spirits were afraid of the night...

It was because the changes occurred at night.

The ground shook. In-gong got up from where he was sitting on Caitlin and caught the stumbling Felicia. Delia, who had her eyes closed, jumped up and shouted,

"Monsters are gathering!"

The ringing sound from the earth was approaching them. In-gong opened his mini-map swiftly. His field of view was unclear and certain numbers couldn't be grasped, but red dots signifying the enemy were covering it.

"What is going on? This place wasn't a forest!"

They had obviously been underneath the hill when night had fallen. There had only been a few trees nearby.

Felicia shouted, but she didn't expect any answers. She just grabbed Caitlin and hurriedly prepared for any enemies. Green Wind's voice reached everyone,

'This is a mixture of illusion and reality. The power of an exceedingly strong spirit!'

The green moon.

If the moon had actually turned green, In-gong's party wouldn't have noticed it. It was obvious that the moon only looked green from this area.

The spirits of insanity and the landscape that had changed suddenly...

As Green Wind said, it was all an illusion. However, it was impossible to ignore it because it was also mixed with reality.



Daphne shouted,

"Our defense has been compromised! If we run away, we can go deep into the forest!"

In-gong glanced at his mini-map. The compass for defense was rotating wildly. The surrounding terrain had changed, so it couldn't figure out the direction.

The shaking of the earth was getting bigger and bigger. It was obvious that they would soon be invaded by monsters. He had to make a decision.

"Fight here! Felicia!"

In-gong shouted while equipping Earth Quaker and White Eagle on both arms. Felicia moved Caitlin behind her and yelled back,

"Call me Noona! Dig!"

She used magic to dig at the ground. As if to test them, the land was immediately filled with illusions.

It was impossible to change the terrain to block the enemies. Therefore, Felicia used different spells.

"Grease! The Wind!"

Felicia made the surrounding ground slippery and created a thick wind barrier behind her to prevent attacks from the rear. She wanted to use the fire barrier, but if she made a mistake, a big fire could happen and they would all burn to death.

Carack laid Seira and Robin down next to Felicia while Delia took out a sword to defend Felicia and the three people. Daphne hesitated for a moment before calling some spirits next to Delia.

It was a situation where the strength of their group had plummeted sharply, but it couldn't be helped. Karma and Chris wasn't here, so In-gong had to be prepared to fight.

"Carack!"

“Understood!”

He didn't say anything, but Carack could understand through his gaze. In-gong would attract the attention of as many monsters as possible. Meanwhile, Carack's duty was to protect the others.

Green Wind shouted,

‘Master! They’re coming!’

‘Dragon Blood!’

In-gong woke up the power of the dragon. At the same time, In-gong was given the power of Daphne's spirits.

"Kuhang!"

The first monsters appeared through the bushes. Like Caitlin and Seira, their eyes were blank. He could sense the spirits of insanity that Daphne had mentioned.

In-gong finished organizing his thoughts, then ran and struck the head of a wolf-like monster with his explosive power, shattering its head with one blow. As he looked around, monsters sprang out simultaneously for a joint attack.

“Fire Arrow!”

The Fire Arrow wasn't only directed at the Dragon Scale Greaves. Extending from In-gong's fingertips, the Fire Arrow struck the monsters and part of the bush caught on fire.

Numerous monsters attacked the party. In addition to the beasts such as wolves and bears, there were also monsters that looked like giant insects. However, their eyes were all blank.

In-gong confronted the monsters. There were waves after waves of enemies, but he couldn't spare his aura here.

He was in a trance-like state and shouted as he destroyed the waist of an ant-like

monster. Aura exploded and the loud sound drew the monsters to him once again.

In-gong sprang up from the ground, flew over the heads of the insect-like monsters and used Great Mountain. An enormous force emerged from the palms of his hands and it started to push the monsters against the ground.

With a terrible sound, some of the insect-like monsters couldn't withstand the pressure and exploded. As soon as In-gong landed, he was hit by a the poison from a poisonous frog. He swung his left arm which contained White Eagle.

Kakakakang!

White Eagle spread the metal plates like wings and flew over the monsters' heads. Some of them couldn't withstand the shock of their heads being hit and collapsed.

Instead of retrieving White Eagle, In-gong made it stay near Felicia.

Green Wind wanted to fight by In-gong's side, but she followed his order faithfully. In-gong could fight more freely if he knew that Felicia and the others were safe.

The passage of time was always relative. Even minutes could seem to last for ages.

In-gong breathed in deeply. The bodies of monsters filled the area; it was evident that he had killed more than a dozen.

Instead of looking back, he used the mini-map to confirm the safety of the party and took out potions from his inventory. There were still a few monsters in the area, but they were a distance away. There was enough time for him to take a breather.

It was at that moment...

A terrible sound, incomparable to before, emerged from the ground. It was almost like an earthquake was occurring.

"Kyaaak!"

He heard Felicia scream from behind him. In-gong looked back hurriedly while opening the mini-map at the same time. Felicia had fallen due to the sudden shaking, but he didn't see any injuries. Nothing on the mini-map had changed as well.

Then a second vibration came. It was definitely different from when the monsters had been running towards them.

“Greenie! Gaze sharing!”

In-gong shouted, pointing to the sky. Green Wind didn’t like being called Greenie, but due to the urgency of the situation, she soared into the sky and shared her vision without saying anything.

The forest stretched out endlessly and a blue light rose from the center of the forest. However, the cause of the shaking wasn’t the blue light.

The cause was to the right of the blue light.

There was something white and huge.

‘Giant?’

He couldn’t be sure. Although it had a humanoid shape, the body was covered with a white light, so he couldn’t confirm it. It tried to reach the blue light but could only scratch at the air. It was like an invisible wall was blocking the giant.

The white giant pushed against the ground again. The forest shook and the giant’s fist finally pierced through the air barrier. It felt like something was breaking.

“Shutra! What is happening?”

"The monsters are coming back!"

Felicia and Delia shouted at the same time. Instead of calling Green Wind again, In-gong continued staring at the white giant.

The white giant then melted into the darkness and scattered. After the giant poured all its strength into it, the invisible wall had fallen.

It was up to there. There was nothing to watch anymore. In-gong stopped sharing Green Wind’s gaze and shifted his gaze to what was before him. Like Delia had said, the monsters had come again.

Yet it was a little different this time. Instead of rushing towards In-gong's group, the monsters headed somewhere else. They literally ran towards another place.

It was even more evident from the mini-map.

What was it? Was someone moving them?

Just then, there was a rustling sound from behind them. Ing-gong turned reflexively and White Eagle flew like lightning toward the sound, but the opponent was quick as well. They avoided White Eagle's blow and ran to Felicia.

"Wait! Don't attack!"

It wasn't Felicia who spoke.

Delia raised her hand and tried to strike the opponent rushing at Felicia, but it was unreasonable. The person flew through the air, grabbed Delia's hand, flipped her around and landed on the ground. While looking up at Felicia, they shrugged and shouted,

"Who are you? Where are you from? Are you friends of the sword duke?"

The one shouting in an urgent voice was a plain raccoon, but unlike the monsters that had appeared so far, both its eyes were full of spirit.

"Who are you?!"

Carack shouted from behind Felicia. The raccoon turned to stare at Carack, then he turned toward In-gong, who was equipping White Eagle back on his left arm, and said,

"My name is Amita, the craftsman who keeps the last flame."

# Chapter 88

## The Last Flame #3

Amita Ignasia:

The best blacksmith out of all those that existed in Knight Saga.

They were called the blacksmith who dealt with the last flame.

"I will ask you again. Who are you? Why do you smell of the sword duke? Are you friends of the sword duke?"

The raccoon questioned in a sharp voice. Felicia pushed a hand against her temple and said in a confused voice,

"Wait a minute, wait a minute. Amita? A raccoon?"

The raccoon wasn't just a raccoon; its body was smaller than that of a regular raccoon and its cute round face was just like a baby raccoon's.

However, as Amita spoke with a frown, it was obvious this wasn't an ordinary raccoon.

"Why, are you resentful towards raccoons? Is this your first time seeing a talking raccoon?"

"Oh, no, that isn't it... Ah, it is the first time I've seen a talking raccoon but..."

The confused Felicia stopped talking. It was a raccoon that wasn't simply a raccoon. Even Felicia, who had travelled all over the world, was in a state of panic.

In-gong had met Amita three times in Knight Saga, but he was confused as well. Yet, he was somehow able to control his mind.

'Anyway, they have appeared in various forms regardless of sex and age. They could also be a raccoon. Perhaps, this is the first time they've transformed into a raccoon.'

When he thought about it, he realised It was plausible. Although it was a foreign story, there was a legend where someone had disguised as a raccoon.

In-gong spoke politely,

"Amita, I am the 9th Prince of the Demon King's Palace. I came to find you with the sword duke's introduction."

After In-gong's introduction, Amita flicked their eyes to Felicia. Felicia spoke in a similar manner to In-gong,

"6th Princess Felicia Doomblade."

They didn't come as people from the Demon King's Palace but as acquaintances of the sword duke. Amita's face relaxed as they liked the courtesy of the two people somewhat.

"The sword duke introduced me?"

"Yes, we got our hands on good materials and he introduced us to the best craftsman."

Amita narrowed their eyes and looked In-gong up and down. Then their gaze turned towards In-gong's arms.

"That is a relic of an elder dragon."

"Yes, they are from Watcher Ainkel and the Great Enkidu."

Amita's eyes narrowed even further. They covered their head with both hands and shook.

"Ugh, okay. Normally, I would have kicked you out, but you came at the right time."

Judging from their words, they seemed to be deeply connected to the situation here. Felicia lowered herself and asked Amita,

"Amita, what is going on? Can you explain?"

"The story is a bit long. So, understand it quickly."

They looked Felicia up and down before sitting on their tail.

"I have been staying in the center of Spider Forest for months. I was thinking about moving to another place in six months, but then suddenly, something happened. Odd creatures covered in a purple aura struck Spider Forest."

The expressions in Felicia's and In-gong's eyes changed.

Amita laughed and asked,

"Why? Do you know these guys?"

"I fought with monsters covered in a purple aura on Enger Plains. Their purpose was to eliminate the guardian of Enger Plains."

Amita scowled at In-gong's description.

"This was done by professionals. Anyway, the guardian of Spider Forest became involved, so I decided to stop them. This is a place where the lycanthrope rangers patrol routinely; I thought that the lycanthropes would be able to resolve the issue if I blocked the monsters properly."

That reminded In-gong about the white giant was striking against a transparent wall. Amita had lived for a long time, so it wasn't impossible that they knew a variety of techniques.

"The problem is... the ones with the purple aura aren't the only ones involved."

In-gong and Felicia nodded. In fact, while fighting in this forest, they hadn't seen a single monster with a purple aura. Moreover, the spirits on Enger Plains hadn't gone crazy like the spirits here were currently doing.

Amita spoke with a sigh,

"These guys are aiming for the last flame. They are enemies — people who had been seeking the last flame in the past. Additionally, the moon is green and all the spirits in the forest have gone crazy."



"What type of people are they?"

The druid Daphne asked with a look mixed with curiosity and fear. Amita responded like they were reluctant to continue speaking,

"They were guardians once but have now become crazy. They covet the power of the last flame."

"Is the last flame that good?"

"I don't know. It is doubtful that they will be able absorb it, but it is true that the last flame is a very mysterious and wonderful thing. They seem to believe that if they absorb the last flame... they will return to the past, before they had gone crazy."

Amita was a very good craftsman. However, it wasn't their strength that was nestled in making the divine armor; It was the strength of the last flame that they used when making the armor.

It was obvious that the 'first flame' from the legend wouldn't be ordinary.

"Anyway, I reinforced the ward in order to prevent them from coming in. The guardian of Spider Forest had to be protected urgently. As a result, the ward has become stronger... but I can't run away. The last flame is stuck to a vein. It isn't permanent and I can remove it, but it will take time."

The most important thing to Amita was the last flame. They felt sorry for the guardian of Spider Forest, but Spider Forest wasn't its main concern.

"The crazy guardians have joined forces with the ones surrounded by a purple aura. They have both become stronger and today, another ward was broken. Now, there is only one ward remaining."

It was clear that the white giant had cracked the transparent wall.

Felicia asked in a serious voice,

"Amita, what will happen if the last flame goes out?"

"I don't know. So far, I've never seen it go out. The possibility is low, but... maybe the world will perish like in the rumours."

Amita responded bitterly. They didn't know what was going to happen, so they were even more impatient.

"Is the sword duke in the area?"

"No."

Amita sighed at In-gong's answer. In-gong understood their mind. If the sword duke was here, he would be able to resolve the issue in a minute.

"Rotten. At any rate, I need you."

Amita stood on two legs and alternated between looking at In-gong and Felicia. In particular, Felicia's heart weakened as she looked at their moist eyes.

"6th Princess and 9th Prince, help me. You must defend the last flame and Spider Forest. Stop them. Keep the royal family's pride and obligations."

Felicia nodded reflexively as she heard 'the royal family's pride and obligations.' However, at that moment, there was a sharp voice,

"Wait! Wait a minute!"

It was Carack who had been staying silent until now. In-gong and Felicia were surprised by Carack's interruption, but Carack didn't care. He showed his stubbornness by crossing his arms and looking down at Amita.

"What will you do in return if Prince and Princess help you?"

"What?"

"The price, the price. Surely, you don't intend for us to risk our lives for nothing?"

Felicia and Delia looked like they were shocked by Carack's words. However, Felicia then gave a strange smile while In-gong decided to simply watch.

Amita looked between In-gong and Felicia, then tapped their chest like they were frustrated.

"Aren't you listening to me? It is an unprecedented situation where the last flame might go out!"

"You said that you don't know what will happen if it goes out. Maybe nothing will happen when the last flame is extinguished."

Carack spoke in a subtle and strangely convincing voice.

Amita shook their fist like it was ridiculous and their tail tapped the floor as they shouted,

"Okay, the reason you came to me in the first place was for a commission. I will make one piece of desired equipment for Prince and Princess. How about that?"

Amita's gaze was directed at Carack, not In-gong and Felicia.

Carack shook his head with a resolute expression.

"That is lacking. The cute and pretty girl sleeping here is the 8th Princess. She struggled with the enemies and lost consciousness. Additionally, all of us have to risk our lives. I don't think that the lives of Prince and Princess are so cheap. There are also the lives of Delia, Seira, Daphne and Green Wind."

Carack only omitted Robin. Whether it was deliberate or he had really forgotten, no one knew.

Amita pressed a hand to their forehead and sat on their tail like they were dizzy.

"You- Don't you know how much my pieces are worth?"

"I don't know. Do I need to know?"

Was it courage or ignorance?

Before Carack's shamelessness, Amita had blanked out. They tried gazing at In-gong and Felicia for help, but it was useless.

"Okay, okay. I will do what you want. I will make one piece of equipment for all of you. Are you satisfied now?"

It was truly an excellent proposal, but Carack shook his head once again.

"There is one more colleague who went to call for reinforcements. She is a very precious companion and Prince's essential subordinate."

In-gong nodded when he thought about Karma. He only had two knights, so it was true that she was essential.

Amita jumped up.

"Up to there! Beyond that, no more!"

"Understood. One piece for Karma who is calling for reinforcements and one piece each for everyone here... Do you promise?"

"Yes, I promise."

Amita waved their hands. Carack laughed and glanced at In-gong and Felicia.

"What do Prince and Princess think?"

"I'll do it."

"I will accept."

When he replied, In-gong was looking at Amita instead of Carack. Amita scowled at the hateful master and servant before speaking,

"I will return to the center of the forest. You aren't spirits, so there is a danger of losing your way if you follow me. Tomorrow morning, the illusions will disappear, so come to the center of the forest. If you hold this, you will be able to pass through the ward that I put up."

Amita pulled out leaves from their arms and pushed them toward In-gong. The leaves looked sophisticated and real but were actually made of metal.

"I understand."

"Then I will see you tomorrow."

Amita sighed, seemingly exhausted, and jumped into the bushes.

Then after one minute, once In-gong was convinced that Amita was gone, he shrugged and asked,

"Doesn't it feel like a storm has passed by?"

It was truly felt like that. Moreover, the conversation with Amita had headed in an unexpected direction.

Carack scratched his head and said,

"I'm sorry if I went overboard. I had no choice as Prince's proud aide."

It made a lot of sense as out of a sense of royal pride and duty, they would have accepted the request regardless.

Felicia smiled pleasantly and reassured him,

"Well, the results are good. The more equipment we have which are made by Amita, the better off we will be. However, I am a little worried. What if it isn't made properly due to Amita's anger?"

"That won't happen. They seem to have a great deal of pride. They will definitely make it correctly."

Carack hadn't pushed Amita without thinking it through. If he was afraid of defective products like Felicia, he would have gone for a different approach.

In-gong nodded.

"I agree with Carack. Their name will go on it, so they will never create something bad."

Amita was such a person. Moreover, it would be divine equipment made from the last flame. If shoddy equipment was made, it would indeed be blasphemy.

"Yes, it is great. Well done."

Amita wasn't a common craftsman but one that they were lucky to gain a commission from.

Since it was unlikely to have an ongoing relationship with them, it was better to receive as many benefits as possible.

Carack laughed when Felicia praised him honestly.

"I'm glad to be of help."

Not only Felicia but Daphne and Delia also looked at Carack with a smile. In particular, the two of them had more than respect in their eyes. It was like they were gazing at a man with great vitality.

'Indeed, someone who manages to get Carack as a husband won't starve.'

In-gong nodded inadvertently and took a deep breath.

"Anyway... I guess this incident is certainly not normal."

With the last flame tied up in the issue, the situation was a mess. Amita wasn't sure if the world would be destroyed if the last flame was extinguished, but it would be a shame for the sacred flame to disappear anyway.

Moreover, it was noteworthy that there were monsters with a purple aura in Spider Forest, similar to those previously in the Enger Plains.

What was their purpose? Why did they attack?

"However, we can't take a step back. As Amita said, we are royalty. It is our duty to protect the guardian of Spider Forest and the last flame. We have to protect Spider Forest until Karma calls for reinforcements."

Felicia declared before turning her gaze towards the sky. In-gong looked up as well.

The green moon was fading away.

"What, why did the number of people increase again?"

"Talking raccoon, I was beside Master yesterday. I should also get my share."

"A talking raccoon is amazing!"

# Chapter 89

## The Last Flame #4

As the morning sun came up, the world changed.

Spider Forest, which had expanded greatly under the green moon, returned to its original appearance and instead of roaring wildly, the beasts and monsters fell into a deep sleep.

After the encounter with Amita, the attacks stopped and the party took turns to rest.

Daphne, who was the last person keeping watch, explained the matter to the three lycanthropes who had woken up.

Caitlin and Seira were embarrassed by their actions last night. Felicia comforted them, then gave orders to Robin. She thought they had to send more news because the situation was worse than when Karma left.

After Robin left in beast form, the party ate breakfast, then headed to Spider Forest.

They didn't encounter any beasts or monsters like they had during the wild night. The ones they did encounter were sleeping in a half-exhausted state, so there was no fighting.

In-gong led the way using his mini-map.

They were able to find Amita settled on the transparent wall of the barrier. The raccoon standing on the rock scowled at them.

"What, why did the number of people increase again?"

Amita's sharp gaze headed to Green Wind as she stood next to In-gong. Green Wind, who was holding In-gong's arm in an actualized state, declared words that were similar to Carack's,



"Talking raccoon, I was beside Master yesterday. I should also get my share."

It was the elegant tone of voice that had first appeared on Enger Plains, but Amita frowned as they didn't like the contents.

"You are a guardian. Why should I make equipment for you?"

Green Wind shook her head at Amita's words and answered with an unconcerned look,

"I belong to Master and Master is mine. Well, yes, that's right. So, I can receive Master's praise. I want to become stronger so that Master doesn't get hurt."

Then after finishing her words, she smiled at In-gong. The look in her eyes was asking for a compliment.

As everyone gazed at them, In-gong stroked Green Wind's head with a somewhat awkward expression while Amita was speechless.

Carack noticed and suggested quietly,

"I just wanted to tell you, this but one of my colleagues left the forest to call for support. He was with us yesterday."

He was talking about Robin.

Amita simply growled instead of answering and glanced at those they hadn't been able to greet yesterday.

"8th Princess and her aide?"

"Seira."

"A talking raccoon is amazing!"

The first was, naturally, Seira, followed by Caitlin. Caitlin had exclaimed before realizing her mistake and all eyes fell on her.

Her cheeks turned red with embarrassment.

"I am the 8th Princess, Caitlin Moonlight. It is an honour to meet you, the last blacksmith."

If he only looked at appearance, the calm Caitlin resembled the 4th Queen Elaine.

However, her cheeks remained red and after the greetings were finished, her eyes were filled with an aspiration that was difficult to express.

Amita laughed and asked,

"Why, what do you want to say?"

"C-can I touch you?"

Caitlin asked carefully and Felicia blinked in shock by her sudden behaviour. However, Seira just laughed with embarrassment like she had been expecting it.

Chris was Caitlin's emotional anchor and the reins that controlled her. In Chris' absence, Caitlin had no choice but to act differently from normal.

Amita seemed embarrassed but they nodded readily.

"I'll allow it."

"Thank you."

Caitlin rushed toward Amita with a bright face and carefully stretched out her hand. Her hands moved naturally to their head and Amita closed their eyes like they were enjoying the touch.

Green Wind narrowed her eyes at the sight and asked,

"Master, do I act like that when I get praised?"

"No, you are much worse."

Green Wind's eyes widened at his answer, but In-gong just stroked her head a few more times. She then frowned, but her face soon became peaceful as she smiled

broadly.

Felicia interrupted this strange atmosphere.

"Hmm, hmm. About that... Let's cut to the chase."

Amita was now held in Caitlin's arms. Amita chuckled and said patronisingly,

"You can hug me as well. I'll allow it."

"There is no need."

Felicia seemed somewhat hesitant, but she refused, opening her fan.

However, thanks to Caitlin, Amita was feeling better, so they didn't mind.

"Tonight, they will attack the ward. So, I've set up my own plan."

Amita jumped from Caitlin's arms and pulled out a piece of paper from thin air. In-gong didn't know if it was inventory magic like his or a magic tool, but he focused solely on the piece of paper.

On the paper, there was a rough map of the terrain around a blue flame.

"Until now, the enemies' pattern can be broken down into two major phases. In the first phase, the beasts and monsters, that were driven crazy by the spirits of insanity, will attack the boundaries of the ward. It is literally just attacking ignorantly. You should've seen the force of the monsters yesterday."

They had rushed back and forth and definitely seemed crazy.

Amita glanced at Caitlin and Seira before saying to In-gong,

"The lycanthropes are susceptible to the spirits of insanity because of the wildness in their instincts. I hope you have prepared a method to counter that."

"We've been preparing."

The group had discussed the specifics last night. Amita looked satisfied at In-gong's

blunt answer.

"When the ward is moderately weakened, the white giant appears in order to destroy it. Did you see the white giant last night?"

"Yes, a white light was shining from its whole body.

"It is made out of all the crazy guardians. The purple aura joins them together."

The white giant had reached an estimated height of 20 meters. It was much taller than the zombie dragon, so he had been perplexed about how to deal with it.

"The pattern has been kept over a few days, so I think they will be doing the same thing tonight. My plan is clear and simple."

Amita put some coins made of red metal on the paper. They seemed to represent the enemy's movement path.

"By deliberately making a hole in the ward, the monsters will be guided there and you will defeat them in order to prevent the ward from weakening."

Amita laid a blue metal plate in front of the red ones. Then they took out white metal plates and continued talking,

"If the ward isn't weakened, the white giant won't be able to destroy it. I have been measuring its destructive power during the last few days. So far, I've observed that they can't maintain the white giant for long. I roughly understand the limits."

Amita moved the red metal plates and tapped the boundaries of the ward with the white metal plate.

"If the ward isn't broken by the time it is morning, they will go away and recover during the day. So, if we can endure the same thing for two days, it will be our victory."

When Amita finished their explanation, Felicia knelt on the floor so that she was at eye-level with Amita and asked,

"Are you saying that reinforcements will arrive then?"

Two days would be quite fast for the reinforcements that Karma had gone to call. However, Amita shook their head.

"There will be reinforcements, but it is more independent."

Amita smiled and tapped the center of the paper.

"In the center, where the last flame is, my weapon is charging its power. Once it finishes charging, you can defeat the white giant with that weapon."

Amita's voice was louder than usual due to their pride in their weapon. Felicia's eyes shone as she was interested in what the weapon was, but Carack was different.

"It shouldn't have to be recharged."

He wished they could use it right away.

Amita glared at Carack before pounding the ground with their tail.

"It isn't a type of weapon in which energy can be stored in. Anyway, do you understand the plan?"

"Roughly. We just need to endure for two days?"

Felicia asked again and Amita nodded.

"That's right. According to my calculations, there will be no need to fight the white giant."

It was quite ideal. In-gong picked up a few red metal plates and asked,

"Amita, will the opponents follow the path we opened?"

"They will follow. It is a situation where they can't think properly due to being possessed by the spirits of insanity. Aside from the white giant, those emitting the purple aura won't be able to do any intelligent actions. So, you don't have to worry about them."

Amita asserted before turning to Felicia, Caitlin and In-gong with a worried

expression.

"The problem is whether you can stop the attacks. They will flock in huge numbers."

It seemed like huge numbers would be mobilized. Felicia replied to Amita in a confident voice,

"If you have defined a position in advance, won't we be able to fortify it? That means we can do it. Shutra and Caitlin are strong."

In fact, Felicia hoped that the two people wouldn't be in danger, but her trust in both of them was real.

Amita stared at In-gong and Caitlin and nodded.

"Hmm, okay. Then let's take a break... What is with those eyes?"

Amita's gaze was directed to Carack and Carack replied in a soft voice,

"Hey, is there really nothing you can do to support?"

"Support in what sense?"

"This is the raccoon's fortress and we are fighting in that fortress. There should be some equipment for us."

The meaning in Carack's words was that this was Amita's fortress and workshop. There was even a special weapon charging in the center, where the last flame was.

Amita narrowed their eyes.

"Are you talking about the pieces I have already created?"

"Oh, that's right."

Carack clapped like he had just thought about it.

"If you lend them to us during the battle, we will be stronger. Don't you want us to stop the monsters?"

It was quite reasonable. However, instead of responding to Carack, Amita looked back at In-gong.

"You- Is he really an orc?"

"I am a pure blood orc. I don't have any other lineage."

In fact, even In-gong suspected Carack's identity sometimes.

Amita sighed and sat down on their tail.

"Okay, I'll let you borrow the pieces that I have made. Do realize the honour. It is the first time you are using Amita's equipment, even if it is just renting."

"I feel honoured."

Carack replied with a smile and Amita frowned again.

"It is really amazing."

Caitlin hugged Amita in admiration. Amita's face brightened in an instant as they laughed.

"Hmm, hmm. This level is nothing."

They looked like a cute, genius raccoon, but they might actually be a perverted raccoon. Additionally, they seemed childish.

"Why? Do you want to hug me?"

Felicia shook her head at Amita's question.

"There is no need. Please show me the equipment that we are borrowing."

"Okay, get ready."

Amita jumped from Caitlin's arms and waved their tail.

Night came once again to Spider Forest.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that Amita had prepared a small fortress. Rocks and trees were piled to make a passage and there were also stacked wood to make roadblocks.

In-gong and Caitlin stood side by side at the entrance of this passage. Behind them, Carack and Seira were armed with weapons, while Felicia and Delia were at the roadblocks. Daphne, who would act as the party's support, was located with Amita at the end of the barricade.

Caitlin and Seira were wearing pipes made of woven tree branches. They had been created by Daphne to dispel the spirits of insanity.

As they stood side-by-side, In-gong and Caitlin were holding hands. In-gong was wearing Earth Quaker while Caitlin was wearing a gauntlet made by Amita. However, the quad-core was triggered just like when they had been touching with bare hands.

In-gong and Caitlin, who had been focusing on their aura, woke up at the same time. Instead of looking at each other, they stared towards the front.

The world was glowing orange. Then it turned purple and became dark in a flash.

In-gong and Caitlin slowly took the posture of Divine Sura Authority.

White Eagle flew in the air while Daphne's spirits energized everyone.

"They're coming."

Someone said.

The night started with a loud rumbling sound.



# Chapter 90

## The Last Flame #5

A battle with magicians was largely divided into three cases.

The first was an unexpected battle with a magician - in other words, a battle where the magician wasn't prepared.

The second was a battle with a prepared magician.

The third was a battle with a magician who waited for the enemy within their magical boundaries.

The reason for separating it into three cases was that the difference in the amount of combat power the magician could use was enormous. It was just like how warriors were stronger when they prepared before fighting on their home ground.

Magicians who understood this principle and applied it to the world were much greater than those who did not. Moreover, the higher the magician's level was, the greater the gap would be. In severe cases, there were times when the attack power differed by dozens of times.

Felicia was a competent magician and she had half a day to prepare. Furthermore, this was a limited area, so it was probably the best battlefield she had ever experienced with In-gong.

However, it wasn't one strong opponent; there were numerous mobs.

Felicia had picked up a magic wand from Amita that could sense magic. As the night started, the power of the spirits were strengthened and illusions surrounded her. However, she had prepared her magic well.

She noticed the world through the magic spells as well as her five senses and opened her eyes, showing her great magical powers to the world!

Kwakwakwang!

Thunder and lightning struck down loudly. The crazy bear at the front was struck by the lightning, burning the bear's brain in an instant. As the lightning reached toward its next goal, it grew exponentially and fell from the sky, striking nearly 30 beasts and monsters.

Once the monsters in the lead fell down, the others naturally rushed over them. They ran over the corpses of the monsters, but Felicia didn't allow them to approach either. Following the lightning bolts, gigantic flames stretched out towards the monsters.

The fire didn't burn the forest easily. Furthermore, the flames were controlled by wind spirits. Instead, the wrath of the flames swept through the monsters and despite being out of their minds, they had a terrible feeling.

However, as Amita had warned, there was an overwhelming number of monsters. Despite the fact that dozens had died in an instant, the seemingly endless procession of red dots on the mini-map never ceased.

The monsters trampled on the corpses and passed through the flames. Additionally, there were those who trampled through the forest and used illusions to create new paths.

However, Felicia didn't panic. She still had a few magic spells prepared.

Due to the ground being spread widely with Grease, it had become more slippery. The momentum of the monsters was great, so many of them tumbled down. As they fell to the ground in rapid succession, some of them fell on their heads and broke their necks. There were also monsters who were trampled by those behind them.

Moreover, there were additional traps in the earth. Then once again, lightning bolts swept through the monsters.

A few minutes after the battle had begun, more than 100 monsters were screaming in front of the party.

Carack was wide-eyed and could barely suppress his urge to look back, while Seira's mouth was wide open and Delia had a warm smile on her face.

The 6th Princess, Felicia Doomblade...

She was also a child of the demon king and a strong existence!

Kwakakakakang!

A series of rapid explosions occurred in front of them. They were the result of the last magic trap Felicia had prepared.

"Next!"

Felicia shouted and In-gong and Caitlin formed fists. They rushed towards the approaching monsters.

The massive trail of bodies Felicia had created was now part of the terrain, hindering the monsters' path and limiting their attack route.

In-gong and Caitlin were blocking their way as well. There was no longer in physical contact with each other, but they still had a connection. The white aura and blue aura stretched out in a thin line like they were holding hands.

In-gong breathed in deeply, then focused his attention on a wolf-like monster running at the front of the mob.

Protagonist Body.

The growing rate of all skills he had learnt was accelerated. In-gong was growing during the battle, just as he had grown in every battle he had fought so far.

Up to now, his movements had been the same. Then he gained some new knowledge. He hadn't known his body had been moving that way until it actually happened.

He didn't explode his aura; he simply manipulated it.

It wasn't the same as before. The explosive power of his aura had actually become stronger.

That's how it was. This was the technique used and it had been created with a simple principle.

[The level of Explosive Power has risen.]  
[The level of Lightning has risen.]  
[The level of Great Mountain has risen.]

His skill proficiency increased suddenly due to the increase of his technical understanding. This was because gaining enlightenment had the same value as training dozens of times.

In-gong felt pleased, but it wasn't the kind of joy that came from destroying an enemy.

It was due to experiencing growth. He was polishing off his techniques. This was the joy of strengthening himself.

In-gong could feel Caitlin's emotions and that she was also pleased. The two of them shared this joy as their auras moved. Then while moving around, they defended each other's backs.

It was like a swirl — a style that caught and crushed everything.

As In-gong remembered his clumsy posture when Carack first made him hold a sword, he laughed. Seira, who knew Caitlin's usual disposition, also had wide eyes from joy and confusion.

Both of In-gong and Caitlin had strengthened noticeably and their team work was comparable to Caitlin's team work with Chris, who she had been moving together with for a long time. No, maybe it was even more than that.

"Kuraha!"

Carack let out a battle cry suddenly. Seira then looked at him and he laughed as he lifted the axe he had received from Amita. It was a fearsome magic weapon that unleashed a thunderbolt every time he wielded it.

Seira understood what Carack meant; it wasn't the time to stand there with admiration. She felt humiliated by losing sight of her role as an aide, but she also liked Carack's trustworthiness. Then in an instant, the blond beauty turned into a fearsome leopard.

Carack, Seira, In-gong and Caitlin went on to deal with the monsters. The process leading from here was difficult and it seemed like the number of monsters weren't decreasing.

As Daphne used recovery magic and support magic on those fighting, she turned to Amita. Instead of laughing or being filled with admiration, Amita was staring at In-gong and Caitlin with serious eyes. They then whispered in a low voice,

"I want to make it."

Daphne's eyes widened while Amita continued to speak,

"I also need to tune it. It isn't completely suitable for him."

The equipment from the elder dragons certainly had great performance, but there was a lot of room for improvement as it didn't fit In-gong completely.

"Amita?"

Daphne called out to Amita with a large grin as she understood the intentions in their small voice.

Amita looked up at the laughing Daphne. They hit the ground with their tail and burst out,

"Well, that is a story for when this is over."

"Once this is over, I will also expect you to make equipment for me."

Instead of replying, Amita just laughed at Daphne.

Meanwhile, Felicia chanted new magic spells to help In-gong and Caitlin who were fighting.

Some time passed...

In-gong, who was in a battle trance, stopped moving his hands and feet. Yesterday, he had dealt with nearly a hundred monsters, yet his level hadn't risen.

However, In-gong hadn't stopped in order to confirm his experience. It was because the endless procession of monsters had finally stopped.

He looked at the mini-map and saw that there were hardly any red dots. Caitlin stopped moving as well and exhaled, while Carack and Seira stretched their arms like they were very tired.

"The white giant is appearing! Come back inside the ward!"

Amita shouted loudly. In-gong and Caitlin hurried into the ward with Carack and Seira following behind them. As soon as the four people came back, Amita closed the hole they had intentionally left in the ward and made it complete.

"Is it over now?"

Felicia asked as she flopped on the ground. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that her whole body was covered in sweat.

Amita nodded.

"Yes. Now, we just have to wait. There will be some impact when the giant taps on the ward, but it won't be a problem. Good work, everyone."

All of them tilted their heads to look up at the sky. Under the green moon, the white giant emerged from the ground.

The giant was right in front of them and before the enormity of the giant, Felicia swallowed her saliva and Daphne felt an instinctive fear.

The giant reached out into the air. A transparent wall was blocking it, so it appeared as though it was miming. This was a repeat of yesterday as it hit the air with its palm and fists.

The party blocked their eyes or lowered their posture to prepare for the shock.

However, In-gong didn't. He saw the blue aura coming from the white light of the giant's body and cried out,

“It is different from yesterday!”

“Shutra?”

Caitlin asked and In-gong concentrated. Astonishment was heard from behind them.

“The power of Death?”

Amita.

In-gong looked back reflexively and saw Amita staring at the giant with a surprised expression. Daphne shrieked.

Kwang!

There was a roar as the whole warding barrier shook. It seemed to be a test as the giant took a few steps backwards. It stretched out both its hands and aimed at the wall with its palms, shooting out a pillar of blue power that contained the aura of Death!

Kwakakakang!

A violent vibration, that couldn't be compared to the first time, hit the party. Carack caught Seira, who had lost her balance, and looked at In-gong urgently, but In-gong was staring at the sky. A crack had appeared in the night sky.

However, the sky hadn't actually cracked; it was the ward that had cracked.

“Amita!”

Felicia shouted hurriedly toward Amita, but Amita didn't look at her. Amita was visibly perplexed.

Kwang!

A second blast shook the ward. The crack grew bigger and the scattered blue energy turned purple. As the blue light spread against the night sky, it took on a creepy appearance.

The ward was on the verge of breaking and it was questionable how many more

attacks it would be able to endure.

"We have to stop it."

In-gong said out loud reflexively. He didn't know how to deal with a 20-meter-tall giant, but he had to stop it.

He was currently level 24.

His level was lacking, but he just needed a little bit more experience. There may be a solution once he reached level 25.

The white giant activated the blue aura once again. Daphne was still hugging Amita with bemusement while Carack and Caitlin were looking for ways to escape.

Then Caitlin pointed towards the sky.

"That... What is that?"

The presence of the green moon and the white giant had been enough to capture everyone's eyes, but something remarkable could be seen in the starless night sky.

Something was approaching from between the green moon and the white giant. It was a silver light that grew bigger and bigger.

Instinctively, In-gong took out the Tears of a Dark Elf. The purple jewel had become lighter.

Similar to In-gong, she pulled out her necklace from where it had been buried in her cleavage. The necklace was also purple.

Felicia stood up instantly. The white giant's third bombardment struck the barrier and In-gong caught Felicia who had been about to fall. Felicia leaned on In-gong and stared at the cracked sky.

"A boat?"

Carack asked. Seira rubbed her eyes, thinking it was a apparition.



Just like Carack had said, it looked like a boat — a gorgeous sailboat with silver sails.

Caitlin blinked. The white giant, who had been preparing for a fourth bombardment, looked at the boat.

Felicia was delighted by the sight. Meanwhile, Delia raised both hands and cheered.

In-gong also recognized it.

It was a ship sailing in the sky. The tears of a dark elf...

The captain who was flying through the sky and the sword of a dark elf that pierced through it...!

“Silvan!”

It was Felicia’s twin brother:

The fifth child of the demon king, 5th Prince Silvan Doomblade!

Felicia called out to the sailboat moving across the night sky as it rammed into the heart of the white giant.

# Chapter 91

## The Last Flame #6

Simultaneously, many ideas popped into In-gong's head.

'How does a ship fly in the sky?'

'Why did Silvan suddenly appear?'

'Why did Silvan choose to ram into the giant out of the many means of attack?'

However, the answers also popped into his head.

To dark elves, the sailboat in the sky was a flying ship. In Knight Saga, Silvan, who claimed to be a captain of the skies, was always riding in it.

However, seeing it in a game was completely different from seeing it in reality. Unlike an airplane, the ship was essentially floating on a sky ocean. In-gong was already familiar with the concept of airplanes, so it was a destruction of his common sense.

He couldn't be sure of the reason why Silvan had appeared.

They didn't always move together like Chris and Caitlin did, but Silvan and Felicia were very strong together. Moreover, the dark elves' values regarding family were famous among the demons. In-gong wasn't sure, but he could only assume that Silvan had come to find Felicia.

Finally, the attack had been a desperate charge.

In-gong couldn't think of any answers. The scene that followed immediately afterwards made his mind go blank.

The giant's upper body exploded. To be precise, it shattered around the area that had been hit.

However, In-gong couldn't cheer as Silvan's flying ship hadn't penetrated through the giant's upper body. The giant's upper chest had exploded before the ship even touched it.

The giant evaded the attack by splitting up.

The flying ship passed through the giant completely and the flying ship drifted in the air as the fragments of the giant united once more. Felicia's scream pierced his ears,

"Silvan!"

The giant's arm struck the rear of the flying ship. The giant hadn't regained its proper form yet, so the attack was unreliable. However, it was still a strike from a giant. The flying ship lost balance completely and headed down towards the ground.

It reminded In-gong of the crash landings he had seen in movies. The flying ship hit the ground with a violent impact. It then pushed across the ground, cutting down dozens of trees in its path.

Amidst the deafening roar and shaking of the earth, Felicia shouted again while In-gong looked hurriedly at the sky. The white giant was preparing for a fourth bombardment.

In-gong sensed it intuitively.

This was the final blow.

Kwang!

The blue pillar of light struck the ward. Already cracked, the ward could no longer endure the attack. There was the sound of glass cracking and the blue light scattered over the sky and ground.

The ward was now broken. The coolness of the night air covered their bodies and the white giant stared down at the ground.

Kwang!

Once again, there was a roar and the white giant exploded. It wasn't an attack. Rather,

the white giant had reached the limit to maintain its present form.

The white giant split into approximately 20 pieces and landed on the ground. Like white clay lumps, they formed their respective shapes and started to emit a white light.

Whether large or small, they were all different. Not only was the amount of light they emitted different, their strengths and weaknesses were different as well.

"Guardians."

In-gong said automatically. Every piece was a guardian. As Amita had said, they were guardians that had gone crazy.

The one in the middle had a prominent presence.

Among all the white lights, it alone was emitting a blue light. Unlike the other guardians who took the form of animals, this one was a humanoid with the power of Death.

It was a guardian that was probably controlling the purple-aura monsters around them.

The guardian raised a hand and the proportions of the forest changed. Under the green moon, the illusion surrounding the entire Spider Forest was lifted.

The forest returned to its original size and the nasty magic that paralyzed directional senses also disappeared.

The reason was simple. Now that the goal was right in front of him, the guardian needed to focus all his power on it. Instead of creating obstacles to prevent escape, he concentrated on attacking.

A purple light rose behind the white guardians and approached from one side.

Throughout yesterday and today, none of the crazed beasts and monsters had been shining purple.

It was something that had been saved...

For this very moment.

In-gong swallowed his saliva. Amita's face was stunned from the impact of the ward breaking. Naturally, everyone's eyes turned toward In-gong and he took out his dwarf dagger without delay.

"Below the King's Flag!"

The moment that In-gong shouted, a pure white light emerged behind him. The flag of a king fluttered in the night sky and the blessing of white light surrounded those around him.

Below the King's Flag wasn't simply a buff magic that strengthened combat power; it also influenced the mind. It sparked loyalty toward In-gong and, more importantly, helped maintain the coolness and calmness that were important elements in battle.

Amita finally recovered their spirit. Felicia, who had lost her mind for a moment due to worrying about Silvan, also stared at the front.

Caitlin formed a fist. There were also changes among the enemies.

The white guardians had started to unite again. This time, they didn't change drastically. It was like they were compressed one by one.

The purple aura filled the vacant spots of the white guardians and after a few seconds, the 20 guardians were reduced to two. One still exuded the blue power of Death while the other turned grey as a result of the compression.

"Fe-li-ci-a!"

Then a voice was heard from a distance. There was no need to ask who the voice belonged to as it was clearly Silvan.

"Silvan!"

Felicia called out. The grey guardian ran in the direction of Silvan's voice while the monsters with the purple aura rushed towards In-gong's party.

Then Felicia stepped back and chanted a spell. Daphne took Amita into her embrace and ran toward the center of the forest, followed by Seira, Carack and Delia, in order to guard the last flame.

Instead of following them, Caitlin produced a blue aura and In-gong activated his white aura as well. The two of them looked at each other without speaking.

A roar shook in their ears. It seemed like the battle between the grey guardian and Silvan had begun. The dark elf sailors ran over and clashed with the monsters with the purple aura.

Then the blue guardian took a step forward.

Despite the battles taking place everywhere, the area In-gong and Caitlin were in seemed silent.

Instead of stepping forward, In-gong and Caitlin grabbed each other's hands. In-gong spoke in a calm voice and Caitlin nodded. She believed in In-gong to the depths of her heart.

The blue guardian took another step forward. In-gong and Caitlin let go of each other's hands, then In-gong opened the mini-map and Caitlin activated her aura once again.

The blue light from the guardian covered the ground. Caitlin pushed against the ground and rushed forward. Despite the guardian possibly being as strong as Gerard, there was no hesitation in her dash.

Then In-gong turned back. Instead of facing the guardian with Caitlin, he ran toward the nearest monster with a purple aura.

Felicia, who had been observing the entire battlefield, was confused by In-gong's actions, but she didn't say anything and turned toward Caitlin. It was because, like Caitlin, she believed in In-gong as well. It was obvious that he had an idea.

There were melees everywhere, but In-gong aimed for one monster at a time. He raced toward a monster and aimed for its head and neck. Immediately after the monster was knocked down, he aimed all his senses toward finding his next target.

By the time In-gong defeated three monsters, Caitlin had received exchanged five

attacks with the guardian. Caitlin had become stronger after learning Divine Sura Authority and forming the Starlight Core, but the guardian was still an overwhelming opponent. Rather than counterattack, she moved quickly to evade or prevent the attacks.

The blue guardian could feel In-gong's actions, but he was focused on Caitlin. If the enemy was acting stupidly, he would take advantage of it.

The power of Death flew toward Caitlin's head like a whip. Caitlin raised her arm hurriedly to block the attack, but the guardian didn't care. He attacked on the premise that it would be blocked. There was a blast as it hit her arm instead of her head.

Caitlin was pushed back from the force. The guardian immediately aimed for Caitlin's waist with his left foot, but Caitlin succeeded in defending against it again. However, this time, her posture collapsed as soon as she defended the attack.

Divine Beast Authority used explosive momentum based attacks. From the beginning, it hadn't been suitable for defense. Divine Sura Authority was based on Divine Beast Authority, so it wasn't much different.

The guardian used a joint attack. The gap that was created with every blocked attack got bigger and bigger and her defense eventually failed on the seventh attack. She barely managed to twist her body to evade it.

Then finally, there was a perfect gap. The guardian, who had learnt this fighting method from the leader of the purple-aura monsters, felt joy at the gap being created perfectly. Without hesitation, he aimed a blow at that gap.

The guardian's fist struck Caitlin's abdomen. Instead of screaming painfully, Caitlin tried to reduce the impact, but it was useless. At this time, the guardian's left arm flew like a whip and caught Caitlin's shoulder. Caitlin had nowhere to escape as he then swung at her chest.

With a loud roar, Caitlin's aura, that was focused for defense, collided with the blue light and she flew backwards.

The guardian strengthened his legs in order to attack Caitlin again, but something caught the guardian's eye. In-gong, who was covered with the blood of the purple monsters, grabbed Caitlin in mid-air and waved his left arm. White Eagle flew forward

from his left arm like an arrow leaving a crossbow.

The guardian crossed his arms for defense, but it was useless. Instead of flying toward the guardian, White Eagle moved to the side and struck a monster nearby. The half-dead monster died from having its head smashed.

‘Why?’

The guardian thought it was crazy and careless. The guardian with the blue light had watched the battle yesterday and today. The strongest of the group was In-gong and he had fought rationally.

So, why was he acting like this now?

Why had he let Caitlin fight alone despite knowing she wasn’t a match for the guardian’s?

Why was he obsessed with killing the monsters with a purple aura? Why did he use the previous opportunity to attack the monster instead of the guardian?

Was he too afraid to fight the guardian himself?

Was he putting off fighting until the strong dark elf defeated the other foe?

It was incomprehensible. It was natural that the guardian didn’t understand.

Caitlin gasped from where she was held in In-gong’s arms. She wanted to speak, but her voice didn’t come out.

In-gong moved Caitlin to one arm and used recovery magic. Then finally, the conditions were met.

He had dealt with eight monsters while Caitlin had been fighting the guardian.

White Eagle had taken care of another one.

Healing Caitlin also gave him a very small amount of experience.

Additionally, he had killed 220 beasts and monsters in the past two days.



[Your level has risen.]

A white light wound around In-gong's body and the stamina that had been exhausted by the battle was instantly restored.

However, this wasn't the reason why. He hadn't risked Caitlin and become obsessed with leveling up just to recover his stamina.

Level 25:

A level that had a special meaning in Knight Saga.

It was possible to increase the level further and depending on the character, a hidden function was also unlocked.

In-gong hadn't aimed for the former.

Although he didn't know what it was, he had full of expectations for a hidden function.

Zephyr and Locke, the two protagonists of Knight Saga, were different from each other, but there were a few things they had in common.

This was one of those things:

Both of them had gained a skill at level 25.

[Super Special Move Control Lv1 has been learnt.]

Zephyr's sword, Dragon Slayer, had the built-in function, Dragon Strike. The Warrior's Sword, which could be called Locke's symbol, had the built-in function, Warrior's Sword.

In-gong had two equipment.

'Master!'

Green Wind shouted with confusion and jubilation as a series of lights appeared before In-gong.

[Great Enkidu's Earth Quaker]  
[Awakened Move - True Destruction has been learnt.]

[Watcher Ainkel's White Eagle]  
[Awakened Move - Absolute Area has been learnt.]

"Shutra."

Caitlin muttered in a small voice. In-gong drew Caitlin closer with his right arm and held out his left arm. White Eagle flew toward In-gong as the blue guardian prepared the same move the white giant had done.

White Eagle landed on In-gong's arm.

The blue guardian sensed the impending crisis and fired a pillar of blue light.

However, In-gong saw it and was prompted by Green Wind to use the awakened move. He declared,

"Absolute Area!"

A green light emerged from White Eagle.

# Chapter 92

## The Last Flame #7

In-gong didn't know exactly what technique Absolute Area was, but he understood it instinctively. Maybe it was because Green Wind, who dwelled in White Eagle, shared it with him unconsciously.

Absolute Area.

The green light from White Eagle became a translucent barrier. In-gong held Caitlin in one arm and used White Eagle with the other. Absolute Area was never intended for defense.

Despite seeing the pillar, that had destroyed Amita's ward, heading towards them, Caitlin wasn't afraid. She leaned back in In-gong's arms and closed her eyes.

Finally, the pillar of blue light reached White Eagle.

It didn't touch them.

He couldn't explain it.

There was no roar. Neither was there an impact caused by the collision between White Eagle and the blue light pillar.

The blue pillar literally vanished the moment it touched Absolute Area's green light barrier.

There was no noise or shock, so In-gong wasn't conscious of it.

It wasn't remarkable because it had literally vanished.

The guardian panicked. He put more power into the light pillar, but it was useless.

Absolute Area.

‘Did it mean an absolute area of defense?’

No, it was different; it wasn’t just that. In-gong started thinking.

The effect wasn’t complete yet. The blue pillar, that touched the green barrier, scattered into dozens of pieces and flew into the air. The fragmented blue pillar changed directions and flew toward the guardian like a rain of fire.

The guardian hurriedly withdrew the blue pillar and took a defensive stance. Some of the rays of light hit the ground around him.

Absolute Area.

It meant absolute dominance. Although it was only a small area around White Eagle, it was a space where In-gong could control everything.

It was indeed a super special move contained in the armour of an elder dragon.

However, one fatal weakness also existed.

“Kuheo...”

In-gong wheezed. The consumption of not only his aura but his stamina was severe. Even though the super special move wasn’t limited to a number of uses per day, it was a good idea to only use it a few times a day considering his current stamina and aura. He would surely reach his limit after using it three times.

However, now wasn’t the time to think about this. As White Eagle flew in the air, In-gong drank a stamina potion hurriedly. At the same time, the quad-core was activated to hasten the recovery of his aura.

Caitlin grabbed In-gong’s hand and her other arm wound around In-gong’s waist as she did something unexpected with the Starlight Core.

It was aura transmission.

Caitlin’s blue aura was passed onto In-gong. It was a one-sided bestowal and not an exchange of aura, so his depleted aura was restored quickly.

“Shutra.”

Caitlin called his name briefly, but it was enough. In-gong understood Caitlin’s intentions and nodded. He hugged Caitlin tightly and released her from his arms.

The bombardment of blue light was almost over. In-gong rushed forward and the guardian defended its front with both arms.

White Eagle returned to In-gong’s side. The guardian could move its hands carelessly, but In-gong narrowed the distance in an instant.

At that moment, White Eagle flew in front of In-gong and an amazing thing happened as a green light obstructed the guardian’s vision. The guardian flinched and hurriedly used evasive maneuvers.

The guardian didn’t know what Absolute Area was exactly. It was impossible to distinguish between when Absolute Area was activated and when it wasn’t.

It was just a simple green light. Green Wind gave off a gentle green light.

However, this wasn’t the green light of Absolute Area; it was completely different.

That gap— a decisive gap had occurred because of that!

‘Master!’

Green Wind shouted. In-gong didn’t want to miss the gap that Green Wind had created. So, he used Wind Style to catch up with the guardian.

The explosive power of Divine Beast Authority combined with Wind Style.

As the two were added, Divine Sura Authority had the same effect as magic. To outsiders, it appeared to be a space jump magic.

The guardian was surprised at In-gong who suddenly appeared before his eyes. Additionally, the guardian was already off-balance due to the green light White Eagle emitted.

Obviously, the guardian was strong. When looking at just its martial arts skill level, it was a little lower than In-gong's and Caitlin's.

If this was a usual fight, In-gong and Caitlin would be waging a defensive battle.

However, this situation had been created and the human feelings of panic and fear destroyed the guardian's movements for a short time.

In-gong couldn't miss out on this opportunity. He had to deal the strongest blow possible.

And what was that?

The answer was already determined.

In-gong formed a fist. A red and yellow light gleamed from Earth Quaker's scales.

Earth Quaker's built-in, super special move:

True Destruction.

There was a simple constraint in which it could only be used when both feet were touching the ground, but it was a deadly technique.

The trick was like Absolute Area. He consciously activated Super Special Move Control and Earth Quaker unleashed the hidden power with an angry cry!

In-gong reached out a hand.

The guardian felt desperate like he was facing Absolute Area. However, the distance was too close. Moreover, In-gong had used True Destruction which was an unexpected technique.

'Telekinesis.'

It was just a small force that was enough to move a small teacup or kettle.

However, that moment was enough to interfere with the guardian's movements. An attack at an unexpected moment was fatal, whether it was be a sharp dagger or a small

needle.

Earth Quaker reached the right side of the guardian's chest. Originally, he had aimed for the guardian's center, but there was a slight gap due to the guardian's movements.

There was a shock the moment that Earth Quaker hit. The guardian tried to express his relief, but it was way too early.

True Destruction...

It suited the Great Enkidu who oversaw destruction.

Earth Quaker rotated many times and once it calmed, there was a huge flash. It destroyed and devoured everything at the same time.

The guardian screamed as half of the guardian was now destroyed. Moreover, that wasn't the end. True Destruction didn't stop there. It rushed behind the guardian and the red and yellow destruction repeated.

The ground was shattered and the bushes disappeared. There was a huge roar as the ground broke apart and the aftermath spread to other places. It caused a small earthquake that affected a radius of 20 meters.

The surrounding terrain was changed. Everyone's eyes focused on this area as the earth split apart and crumbled.

It was like a giant dragon had scratched the surface with its claws.

There was huge damage. At the same time, the amount of stamina and aura consumed was also huge.

The guardian with the blue light fell to the ground and in the shocked silence, there was a loud cry.

It wasn't one of mere suffering; it was a call. The grey guardian, who had been facing Silvan, started to run towards the blue guardian and In-gong.

Someone yelled and the silence collapsed. Silvan grabbed the body of the grey guardian.

In-gong stretched out his right arm on which Earth Quaker was equipped. He then stabilized his breathing and triggered the quad-core again. Through the link between the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core, he squeezed out more of Caitlin's aura and watched the blue guardian.

Half its body had already disappeared and In-gong could feel the power of Death draining from the blue guardian.

In-gong held out his left hand naturally and used a familiar, yet unfamiliar, technique. He could use Divine Beast Authority, which had transformed into Divine Sura Authority, through communion with Caitlin.

Arang.

“-----!”

He struck the guardian. It was a cry that couldn't be called a scream.

The flow of aura was destroyed. The power of the blue light and the power of the guardian started to flow freely through the half of the body that was remaining.

Silvan had caught the grey guardian while In-gong was still looking down at the guardian who was in pain. In-gong could feel violent emotions coming from the energy of Death.

They were similar yet different feelings to what he had felt from Famine.

It was a poisonous and vicious hate.

This wasn't as intense as Famine. Instead, it was very cold. If Famine's feelings were a fiery anger, then Death's feelings were a cold rage.

There was also a strange affection— a chaotic emotion that could be called 'love', rather than pure hatred.

In-gong gathered the power of Conquest in his left hand and the white Conquest suppressed the blue Death. He then grabbed and destroyed the power of Death, along with the guardian.



The grey guardian shrieked as Silvan had cornered it. After the demise of the blue guardian, the grey guardian couldn't fight properly anymore.

It was just like when In-gong had defeated Mustafa or Balkarova. As the blue light, which was the power of Death, disappeared, the monsters lost their purple aura. Almost all of them lost their lives, collapsed or started to escape.

Silvan and the half a dozen people in his crew left to chase them, so In-gong's fight was now over.

[Your level has risen.]

He had barely just reached level 25 and he had now gained another level. It was nice hearing the woman's voice after only a few minutes.

Like a blessing, the white light that covered him restored his stamina instantly. However, his aura was still in a depleted state. The mental power consumption was so severe that he could barely hold on.

In-gong sat down and looked behind him. Just like In-gong, Caitlin was also sitting on the ground. Her face was pale since In-gong had squeezed out her aura to the limit.

'Shutra as well.'

It was too far away, but he was certain he heard a voice.

Caitlin smiled with some resentment at having her aura taken and In-gong laughed back. He moved his lips to mouth the word, 'sorry', and Caitlin responded in a similar manner. The message was clear even without sound.

'Shutra is indeed amazing.'

The two people looked at each other and laughed again, then they fainted together.

'Master!'

"Shutra! Caitlin!"

"Prince!"

"Royal Princess!"

The rest of the party called out to In-gong and Caitlin. They shouted simultaneously and ran towards In-gong and Caitlin.

Amita didn't run along with them. Instead, they gazed at In-gong from where they were being held in Daphne's arms.

The last flame whispered to Amita.

Amita nodded and looked at In-gong one last time before turning around. They smiled without realising it.

"Once again, I will introduce myself. I am 5th Prince Silvan Doomblade. As you can see, I'm a prince of heaven who moves across the sky."

"It is truly shameful... but as you all know, he is my twin brother."

# Chapter 93

## The Last Flame #8

In-gong opened his eyes.

His vision gradually cleared and he saw a ceiling.

‘I am becoming used to this.’

In-gong whispered as he blinked.

It was the first time he had fainted straight after battle. Although, there had been a few times when he had been filled with exhaustion after the battle was over, yet still had to clean everything up. Even when he fought Gerard, he had lost consciousness only when the battle was fully completed.

‘I should invest more points in durability and persistence... No, it is an aura problem, so I should raise the level of Aura.’

His mind cleared up and he could now feel the warmth that was right beside him.

In-gong turned his head sideways. As expected, Caitlin was sleeping serenely next to him.

Felicia and Carack knew the effects of the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core, so they were holding hands like they had done at the lycanthrope house.

There was a dark orange light, so he couldn’t see Caitlin’s face clearly, but she was very calm. In-gong’s heart warmed as he gazed at her.

‘Shutra as well.’

Caitlin had said it.

He was sorry for having squeezed out her aura so forcefully, but she looked cute.

‘Relax, relax.’

In-gong took a deep breath and raised his upper body. However, there was someone attacking In-gong’s upper body.

‘Master, you’re awake!’

As expected, it was Green Wind. Green Wind hugged In-gong’s upper body tightly. The weight felt good and he turned to face her, stroking her head with his free left hand.

“Well, well. Yes, yes. Whoa, whoa.”

It felt similar to how he soothed Maybach. Then Green Wind complained,

"Your treatment seems different from usual, but it feels good. Continue, Master."

It wasn’t possible to see Green Wind’s expression since her head was buried in In-gong’s neck, but he could tell what the expression was.

In-gong laughed and patted Green Wind’s back slowly.

“Yes, yes. Well done. It was clever to trick the guardian with your green light.”

He whispered proper praise into her ears. Then Green Wind raised her body and gazed at In-gong. She said with a big smile,

"Did you only just find that out? Nevertheless, Master is a good master. Praise my wits."

She then burrowed herself in In-gong’s arms again.

1,000 years of solitude was scary. Or was this perhaps just her natural personality?

In the end, In-gong couldn’t control his laughter as he kept stroking Green Wind’s back. The texture of her long hair felt good.

“Yes, yes. Well, well. Nice, kind.”

It was good that Maybach was at the Demon King’s Palace right now.

In-gong had the mischievous thought as he held the beauty in his arms and looked around the room.

The walls, ceiling and furniture were all gorgeous, but the room itself was quite narrow. In-gong and Caitlin were lying on a slightly large single bed that wasn't meant for two people.

"Is this a room in Silvan's flying ship?"

Green Wind raised her body again at In-gong's words.

"You're so great, Master. How did you know?"

"I can't not know."

In-gong pointed at the opposite wall and Green Wind quickly turned to look. There was a big portrait hanging on the white wall.

The shiny silver hair, healthy brown skin, charming beauty and noble air... However, the most noticeable things were the eye patch over the right eye and the plump feathered captain's hat. The subject of the painting was posing in a very strong and uncomfortable posture.

'It reminds me of Napoleon's portrait.'

In it, Silvan was wearing tight silk pants.

In-gong looked away from the portrait towards Green Wind again.

"The others?"

"Everybody is sleeping. The fight was only completed a few hours ago. It is now early morning. Felicia wanted to watch over my amazing master, but Felicia was also tired. She decided to rest based on my recommendation."

There was one strange thing about the story.

"Amazing?"

He guessed it was referring to him, but it was strange.

Green Wind replied with an unconcerned expression,

"Meeting you is amazing, amazing. Moreover, Master seems to feel very good when someone says amazing."

It was undeniable. Green Wind turned briefly to look at the sleeping Caitlin, then leaned close to him with a bright face.

"Master is amazing."

Despite it being said informally, its effect was great. In-gong cleared his throat as he felt his heart beating wildly.

"Uhh, I won't deny it. However, please don't take Caitlin's identity."

"I don't know what you're talking about."

Green Wind laughed and raised her body. As she touched In-gong's shoulder, she became half-blurred.

"Rest a little more, Master. Morning is still far away."

"Yes."

The clock on the mini-map said that it was two in the morning. Like Green Wind had said, morning was still far away.

In-gong lay back down on the bed and closed his eyes. He could feel Caitlin's warmth through his right hand as he fell deep asleep.

"Once again, I will introduce myself. I am 5th Prince Silvan Doomblade. As you can see, I am a prince of heaven who moves across the sky."

"It is truly shameful... but as you all know, he is my twin brother."

The next morning...

In-gong and Caitlin washed up with the water Carack brought them and Felicia and Silvan came to visit them.

Silvan glanced at Felicia who looked ashamed and clicked his tongue.

"Felicia, don't be ashamed. As my sister, you also have my beauty and grace. So, you don't have to be ashamed of that. Stand proudly."

He didn't know why she was ashamed, or maybe he was just ignoring reality.

"I'd rather die."

Felicia covered her red face with a fan and took deep breaths. It seemed like Felicia received Silvan's share of shame. It was unfortunate that she couldn't lament it openly.

In-gong closed his mouth as he tried to stop from laughing and Caitlin looked from Felicia to Silvan with curious eyes.

Felicia, who had barely recovered her composure, pointed at In-gong and Caitlin.

"Caitlin and Shutra. Silvan, do you know them?"

"Well, roughly. It has been a long time since I've seen them up close."

Silvan gazed at In-gong and Caitlin. It could almost be seen as a displeased look.

However, Caitlin greeted him with her normal bright face.

"It is nice to meet you, Silvan oppa."

"Nice to meet you too."

Unlike Felicia, he talked to Caitlin in a more formal way. It was the same for both In-gong and Caitlin. Compared to Felicia, it was harder for Silvan to act friendly with them.

Silvan's expression changed after they exchanged greetings. His eyes narrowed as he asked Caitlin,

"How is Chris?"

It was much smoother compared to when Chris mentioned Silvan, but it wasn't that intimate.

However, Caitlin just smiled.

"He is very healthy. He's doing well."

"I- I see."

Silvan seemed confused by Caitlin's attitude. Felicia laughed at their conversation and raised a hand to Silvan's shoulder.

"Silvan suddenly appeared because of me. While staying at the lycanthrope house, I used a long distance communication method and contacted him."

"Felicia noona?"

"Yes, he told me that he would come see me. I thought it would take a long time because he was quite a distance away, but he arrived sooner than I expected."

It was the reason she didn't mention Silvan when they had been worried about reinforcements for Spider Forest. Felicia thought that she wouldn't be able to meet Silvan until after two weeks.

Silvan pulled Felicia close and stroked her head.

"Felicia was exhausted. I needed to charge over as quickly as possible. So, I flew like the wind to meet my beloved sister."

She didn't feel any better despite his sweet voice. Chris loved Caitlin quite a lot, but it seemed like Silvan loved Felicia more. Felicia held back a sigh and said to Caitlin,

"I'm sorry about my brother. His screws are a bit loose, but he isn't a bad person. He is just a fool."



Caitlin nodded. In order to change the atmosphere, In-gong spoke to Silvan,

"You were a big help in last night's battle. Thank you."

Although the first charge had been impulsive, Silvan's subsequent activities had been impressive. He had also taken care of everything after In-gong and Caitlin fainted.

Silvan raised an eyebrow at In-gong's appreciation, then replied with a bitter laugh,

"I did my best, but... you played a more active role. You were amazing. I heard about it, but I honestly never imagined that you would be this great. It's amazing."

"Isn't it? Didn't I tell you? Isn't our Shutra great?"

Felicia raised her chin as she exclaimed. Caitlin nodded in agreement.

"Shutra is amazing."

If Chris had been there, he would have asked why the two people were saying it. However, this was Silvan.

Silvan simply shrugged and spoke to Felicia in a sad voice,

"Felicia, this oppa is also great. If I take off this eyepatch..."

"I'm sorry about my brother."

Felicia quickly cut off Silvan's words. However, Caitlin was curious.

"Silvan oppa, what will happen if you take off that eyepatch?"

"Ahh."

Felicia lamented, but it was too late. Silvan laughed happily.

"It is good that you asked. This is a special object that suppresses my strength. If I remove this, my true strength will awaken. However, that power is dangerous, so I usually keep it suppressed."

“Wah!”

Caitlin let out a sound of admiration and Felicia blushed as she shook her head.

"Caitlin, you should do it moderately."

"Huh? But it really is great. Very cool, Silvan oppa."

Silvan felt perplexed by Caitlin's heartfelt admiration. He then turned to ask In-gong a question,

"That reminds me. Shutra, that technique you used— Chris uses a similar one. Did you learn Beast Authority from the lycanthropes?"

"Yes, I learnt the basics from Chris and Caitlin."

"Our Shutra is amazing."

Felicia boasted about In-gong once more and Caitlin nodded again.

"Even the sword duke praised his great talent."

“Wait, the sword duke?”

Silvan's expression changed instantly. He gazed at Felicia with a stiff expression.

“Felicia, what does that mean?”

"Uh, well... that..."

Felicia seemed distressed as she avoided his gaze. She knew he would have this type of reaction if the story about the sword duke came out.

Silvan let his gaze linger on Felicia, then turned back to Caitlin. At that very moment, knocking was heard at the door.

"How long do you want me to wait?"

Amita was waiting at the door with a sad expression. Felicia instantly turned toward them.

"Amita."

"Yes, is there a problem?"

"No."

Silvan knew that Amita was the sword duke's friend and retreated with dismay. Amita stared at Silvan for a moment, then stepped towards the group.

"Are you both okay?"

"Thanks for your concern, but I am fine."

"Me too."

In-gong spoke first, followed by Caitlin.

Amita pounded on the floor with their tail and said,

"Thanks to you, I was able to defend the last flame yesterday. So, I will make you the equipment as promised, but we have some work to do before that."

There was something else left?

While everyone had puzzled expressions on their faces, Amita turned toward In-gong.

"9th Prince, the last flame wants to meet you."

"Huh?"

"Literally. Follow me."

The last flame...

The sacred fire.

Everyone's faces became shocked.

# Chapter 94

## The Last Flame #9

"Uh, is Last Flame the name of a person?"

Carack whispered to the group. Seira, who was walking next to him, responded in a small voice,

"Rather, won't they be similar to Green Wind?"

That was a likely story. If Green Wind was a person who had the power of the wind, it was possible that the last flame was one with the power of fire.

"Either way, it is intriguing."

Felicia said with a smile. It was good for her. Encountering unknown knowledge always excited her.

"Amazing."

Caitlin said in a small voice and Delia nodded. Amita, who was leading the way, suddenly stopped walking. Their long tail pounded against the ground as they shouted,

"I only called 9th Prince, so why are there so many followers?"

Amita's anger was understandable. It was literally a procession.

Felicia and Caitlin were on either side of In-gong and Silvan was next to Felicia. The aides, Carack, Seira and Delia, followed by Daphne, were behind the princes and princesses,

Amita was angry, but it was more cute than scary, simply because they were a raccoon. Moreover, there was one person in the party who could handle Amita comfortably.

“Amita, I’ll hug you.”

Daphne opened her arms and said to Amita. Amita then turned to Daphne and nodded.

“I won’t refuse.”

They coughed a few times in embarrassment and Daphne hugged Amita with a gentle smile.

The party followed the gentle Amita and went to a small temple nearby. It was a little bit larger than the temple on Enger Plains and was built entirely of wood. It wasn’t made from cut trees, but the trees themselves had tangled together into the shape of a house.

As they passed through the entrance at the tree trunks, there was a large space with a little girl standing in the middle. She was a short-haired girl dressed in a white dress.

“The guardian of Spider Forest.”

In-gong looked at the girl in surprise after hearing Amita’s words. Robin had talked about a big spider, so he had never imagined she would be a little girl.

‘It isn’t a body. It is like some type of terminal. Moreover, she seems to be a young guardian based on her appearance. A large spider might have been the guardian in the past, but based on her appearance, the previous mess is understandable. She seems young and weak, without the strength to fight.’

In-gong jumped as he heard Green Wind’s words. ‘A young guardian? There’s even something like this? And the former guardian was a spider. Does that mean a guardian can give birth?’

He was full of questions that he wanted to ask, but the situation wasn’t good.

The girl guardian lifted the hem of her dress slightly and curtsied.

“I am Kafran, the guardian of Spider Forest. Thank you for saving me.”

He wondered where she learned how to curtsy. ‘Did Amita teach her?’

In-gong laughed at the thought of a raccoon teaching her courtesies and called Green Wind.

“Green Wind.”

Green Wind took a solid form next to In-gong. Unlike the party that was accustomed to seeing Green Wind, Kafran made a surprised face when she saw Green Wind.

In-gong turned to Green Wind and said,

"Share your stories. Isn't this a rare opportunity?"

It was a chance for guardians to talk to each other.

Like In-gong said, it was a rare opportunity. Kafran's eyes sparkled and Green Wind also seemed excited by the prospect, but that was only for a moment. Green Wind frowned and said hesitantly,

“But I have to follow Master...”

"It doesn't matter. Only 9th Prince can face the last flame alone."

Amita said in a stiff voice. However, Kafran seemed pleased.

In-gong stroked Green Wind's head lightly.

“I will be back.”

"I understand, Master. Come back safely. It would be good if you can buy me a gift."

Green Wind laughed happily. In-gong chuckled at the words 'buy me a gift.'

"Who taught you to say that?"

"Carack taught me."

Everyone's gazes turned toward Carack who simply had shameless expression on his face.

While they were all laughing, Amita shouted,

"Do you plan to stay here all day? Let's go!"

Green Wind remained with Kafran while Felicia and Caitlin showed interest in their conversation. Silvan, Delia and Seira stayed still while Carack and Daphne, who was carrying Amita, followed In-gong deep into the temple.

They stopped in front of a black door and Amita jumped down from Daphne's arms.

"It is up to here. Only 9th Prince can enter."

Daphne was sad since she wanted to see the last flame, but Amita didn't tolerate anyone other than In-gong.

Carack stepped back with Daphne and grinned at In-gong.

"Enjoy yourself."

"Yes."

There was a gentle light inside the door. Small blue lights, reminiscent of fireflies, filled the room that had an approximate radius of two meters.

In the middle of the room, a green fire was burning on a small altar. It was a small flame that was only the size of Amita, but he couldn't take it lightly. This was a flame that gave off an unusual energy.

Amita jumped on the altar and pointed to the green flame.

"This is the last flame. Put your hand inside it."

"Huh?"

Put his hand in the fire?

"It's okay. This isn't an ordinary flame. Do I have to explain everything like this?"

"I understand."



In-gong replied to Amita, who had taken out a pipe, and approached the last flame. After taking a deep breath, In-gong put his hands into the fire.

Amita's words were true. Rather than hot, the flame was warm. He didn't feel his skin burn.

In-gong slowly moved his hands further into the flame and it grew bigger. Suddenly, the now larger flame swallowed up In-gong's body.

Instead of screaming, In-gong closed his eyes reflexively and soon found himself standing in a completely different place.

The world was on fire. It was a place filled with green fire.

However, rather than the negative representation of hell, In-gong was reminded of something else. It was an awkward expression, but if he had to name it, he would call it the Kingdom of Fire.

The beautiful and mysterious green flames bloomed like flowers and the warmth seemed to be melting In-gong's heart.

In-gong stabilized his breathing. The flames in front of him parted to the sides and revealed the existence behind them.

It was a woman made of flames. She looked like a young girl as well as an unmarried woman. Due to the flickering flames, her appearance seemed to change constantly.

The last flame.

According to legend, it was also the first flame.

She sat down on her throne of fire and looked down at In-gong. As she smiled through her blazing hair, a throne came up behind In-gong and the two thrones neared each other.

"It is nice to meet you, Conquest Knight."

The last flame spoke. In-gong stared at the last flame with surprise and she laughed at

him.

"You are a Conquest Knight with the power of Conquest. I couldn't help but notice since you used the power in front of my avatar."

"Avatar..."

"Indeed. Amita is my avatar— a cute and lovable child."

In-gong gave a small laugh. At the very least, their outward appearance was cute and lovely.

The last flame smiled at In-gong and crossed her legs. She leaned her head against her arm supported by the armrest and said,

"Your eyes are filled with wonder and confusion. Don't you know what a Conquest Knight is?"

In-gong nodded. It was the first time he could have a conversation about what a Conquest Knight was. This wasn't the time to be ashamed of his ignorance.

"Yes, I don't know. But I would like to know."

His desire to know had become stronger after her words. The last flame spoke again,

"How funny."

The last flame was a queen. She uncrossed her folded legs and straightened her posture. Seeming to gaze into the distance, she recited a poem,

"Conquest, War, Death and Famine - the Four Knights of the Apocalypse."

Flames rose up around the throne. The green flames started forming shapes: a crown to symbolize Conquest; a sword symbolizing War; a sickle symbolizing Death; and an empty bowl symbolizing Famine.

"They are the riders of the end and the ones longing for the destruction of the world."

The flames erased the symbols. It was like the symbols had burnt and destroyed

themselves.

‘Those who crave destruction.’

‘The ones who would cause the end.’

It seemed to be a natural story; War, death and famine - they were all words with negative connotations.

The last flame leaned back against her throne. She observed In-gong and said,

"However, you are a little bit- no, very different. Why are you a Conquest Knight?"

The last flame stopped talking. Then she stared intensely at In-gong and continued,

"The Knights of the Apocalypse are those who crave destruction. It isn't because they are Knights of the Apocalypse. They were chosen as knights because they already have those urges."

The only Knight of the Apocalypse that In-gong had faced directly was Gerard, the Famine Knight.

He was crazy.

He enjoyed destruction and slaughter and even tried to kill his own kin.

"You don't wish for destruction nor do you enjoy destruction and slaughter. Moreover, you aren't affected much."

"Affected?"

He asked reflexively and the last flame laughed. She formed two flames which were connected by a thin line of fire in the air.

"Those who have been selected as a Knight of the Apocalypse — Conquest, War, Death, and Famine - those are the only things that can be expressed. The Knights of the Apocalypse are strongly affected by them. That is how their strength is able to grow. Under that influence, they will try to bring an end to the world. But you are different. You are almost unaffected by Conquest. Conquest also doesn't want to conquer you."

Rather..."

The last flame became hazy as she smiled. Her eyes narrowed and she whispered,

"Maybe she is hoping to be conquered by you."

The golden-crowned woman with red and blue eyes...

She had never tried to manipulate In-gong and only revealed her appearance and voice when In-gong was in a crisis.

"This is just my guesswork. In fact, this is the first time I've encountered a Knight of the Apocalypse. I have said all that I know."

The last flame laughed and crossed her legs again. Then she spoke with a frowning face that was similar to Felicia's,

"You don't wish for destruction, nor do you want to cause the end of all life. What do you want to do? Now that the three knights are pursuing its end, what do you want in this world?"

It was a fundamental question.

What did he want to do?

Go back to his original world?

Of course, he was thinking about returning, but there was one other thing in this world that he wanted to achieve.

He had always been thinking about it.

He wanted to stop the massacre of the lycanthropes...

And prevent the Day of Massacre.

He wanted to change the demon king's children's future of being killed by Zephyr. He wanted to protect everyone, including Caitlin and Felicia.

All these things could be summarized simply.

He wanted to change the ending... And stop the tragic ending of Knight Saga.

He needed to do so. That was what he needed to do.

He didn't think it was the reason he was brought into this world. He didn't consider what Conquest's dream was. In-gong himself wanted to do this.

He would knock down Zephyr and all the Knights of the Apocalypse that were seeking destruction.

It didn't matter if it coincided with the reason for his summoning or Conquest's dream.

In-gong's dream was to change the ending.

"You are not like the Knights of the Apocalypse, but you are a person well suited to be a Conquest Knight."

The last flame lifted her hand as she said this. Then she formed a fist slowly.

"The Conquest Knight is the king who subjugates all things — he who was born with the fate of a king."

Punishment, obedience, governance...

Skills, magic, guardians, the heart of an elder dragon...

And it didn't stop there.

"The simplest and most perfect way to fulfill your desires is to become the demon king."

The 4th Queen, Elaine Moonlight had asked him if he wanted to do this.

Chris, her son and one of In-gong's strongest allies, had also asked him.

Now, the last flame as well.

"Lord, will you become the demon king?"

"I will become the demon king."

In-gong declared.

It was so natural that the last flame was satisfied. She got up from her throne and approached In-gong.

"Conquest Knight, who seeks life and not the end- no, the King of Conquest..."

She laid her lips on In-gong's forehead; the sacred flame blessed In-gong.

"I pray that your dream will be fulfilled.

[Divine Power Lv1 has been learnt.]

[Incarnation of Fire Lv1 has been learnt.]

[A 'strong alliance' has been formed with the last flame.]

[Your level has risen.]

In-gong smiled at the sudden words. Just like the actors that he had sometimes seen in movies, In-gong kissed the back of the last flame's hand.

And her response to In-gong's unexpected action?

The last flame laughed and kiss In-gong on the lips, not the forehead.

In-gong's eyes widened at the sudden kiss and the last flame kept laughing.

The world was burning.

In-gong opened his eyes. Instead of the burning throne and the beautiful last flame, the room was filled with blue light.

It had been a short yet long conversation with the last flame.

There were certainly benefits. He had learnt a little bit about the identities of the knights and was able to clarify his purpose.

There was also one more thing.

Amita, who was staring blankly at the last flame, suddenly pounded on the ground with their tail. They jumped up and shouted at In-gong,

“Why? Why did the last flame suddenly ask me to make you a full set?”

Instead of answering, In-gong raised a hand to his lips. The pleasant heat was still lingering there.

"9th Prince! Answer me!"

In-gong looked toward the last flame instead of Amita. It felt like the green fire suddenly smiled.

“Full set... Thank you.”

In-gong said and Amita shook their head. Once again, their tail slammed against the ground angrily.

# Chapter 95

## Sign

[Name: Shutra Ignus]

[Age: 14]

[Species: Gandharva]

[Occupation: Protagonist]

[Secondary Occupation: Conquest Knight Lv2/Dragon Humanoid Lv1]

[Uniqueness: Prince/Conquest Knight/Dragon Humanoid]

[Properties: Life/Wind/Fire]

[Level: 27]

Strength: 86

Intelligence: 65

Agility: 65

Talent: 65

Persistence: 65

Durability: 65

Mental Power: 65

Magic Power: 65

Charm: 45

Extra Points: 38

Spider Forest had short days. He could barely feel the seasons as he wandered around the Demon World, but it was a time when winter was approaching.

In-gong examined his body inside one of the various small rooms in the small temple. It was strange seeing it after so long.

‘I feel like I have too many extra points. Should I start investing some of them?’

Thanks to investing additional points in strength, he could suppress Caitlin easily.



What if he hadn't invested more points in strength? Although he was family, he might have missed catching her or might have been overpowered by her.

There were two reasons why In-gong had saved his extra points.

First, it was to prepare for moments when specific stats were especially needed.

An example of this was the incident when he suppressed Caitlin using strength. It was good to raise all his stats as a whole, but it was better to keep some points just to cope with unexpected situations. So, he could invest the points when he needed to.

Secondly, he hadn't judged what type of stat would be better to invest the points in.

This was the so-called maximum efficiency.

In-gong was growing at a fast pace and just with like Divine Sura Authority, it was common to learn new skills. Therefore, he might regret investing the points in one place.

'Of course, I might also regret it if I save the points.'

The time required to invest the points and increase the stats was at least 10 seconds long.

It was a very short time, but that could be a long time in a battle.

If he died, everything would over. It was necessary for In-gong to increase his basic capacities in order to face strong opponents such as Gerard and the guardian.

'Let's invest some and leave a few behind.'

In-gong made up his mind and invested seven points each in agility, talent, persistence and durability.

Agility and talent would strengthen Divine Sura Authority while persistence and durability would increase the number of times he could use it.

Altogether, he used 28 points and had 10 points remaining.

In-gong closed his eyes and focused on his own body. The seven points caused his existing stats to rise by more than 10%. If he concentrated, he could feel the difference.

'I don't know about persistence and durability. In fact, my skills as well.'

Still, he could feel the rise in agility. The trajectory of his swinging fist was faster and cleaner than before.

'Maybe I should increase charm.'

In-gong touched his lips involuntarily and laughed. He erased the youthful delusions in his head and activated the skills window.

[The King's Knights Lv2]

Level 25 was a special level, so several skills were automatically increased.

The most notable among them was The King's Knights.

At level two, the number of knights increased from two to four and the performance of Call was enhanced.

[Call: It is possible to summon a knight once every three days.]

The knight captain restriction was lost. He could now call other members besides Carack.

'For now, there is only Karma.'

In-gong wanted to try and call Karma but stopped himself. He didn't know what Karma was doing and the restriction of once every three days was never light. He couldn't waste it when he might need Call tomorrow.

'I should be thinking about who I should add as new members.'

The first name that surfaced in his head was Daphne.

Although it was unclear if she belonged to In-gong or Felicia, she had already helped In-gong several times in battle. Furthermore, her spirits and abilities as a druid were very helpful. It was a talent that he couldn't miss.

'I don't know if I can, but... I want to add Caitlin and Felicia.'

He would be able to use Call on both of them.

Almost half the calls he made to Carack were to escape from a crisis. By adding the two people, it would be easier to protect them, especially Felicia.

'I will tell them about it later.'

If he really wanted to aim for demon king, he needed to acquire both of them.

'Let's check the situation.'

As the level of The King's Knights increased, the enhancement effect on the knights rose. So, that could be used as a material for negotiation.

Next, In-gong checked the battle skills including Divine Sura Authority.

This time he was able to invest his skill points without worry.

Aura and Arang...

He chose to raise Aura, so the amount of aura he had would increase. Additionally, Arang was the only special move that he could invest skill points into.

Even so, it was Arang from Divine Beast Authority, so it used quite a lot of skill points. After raising Aura, the remaining skill points were ambiguous. So, In-gong decided to save them.

'I should train the smaller skills.'

There was quite a bit of progress.

After he finished checking all his stats and skills, In-gong closed the windows and sat down.

He thought about the story the last flame told him.

The Four Knights of the Apocalypse that would cause the end...

‘Conquest.’

The woman with one red and one blue eye...

She hadn’t make any demands of In-gong. The last flame had said that Conquest was actually hoping to be conquered by In-gong.

In-gong recalled her; he remembered her eyes and voice when she said that he was her only hope.

Those who crave destruction...

And the ones who wanted the end.

He couldn’t believe it.

Was In-gong being deceived? Or did she really want him to be different from War, Death and Famine?

The Death Knight.

He had attacked Green Wind, the guardian of Enger Plains, and Kafran who was the guardian of Spider Forest.

Why was he attacking guardians? Was there some type of connection between attacking the guardians and causing the end of the world?

How would they bring about the end?

If it wasn’t that, what was the Death Knight’s aim?

‘Master.’

In the midst of his worries, In-gong heard Green Wind’s voice. In-gong opened his eyes

and saw Green Wind's smiling face.

"Did you enjoy talking to Kafran?"

Green Wind had been with Kafran ever since he entered the small temple.

Green Wind nodded.

"I enjoyed it. Kafran is a very cute and good child. Rather, I smell something different coming from Master."

"Huh?"

Instead of answering, Green Wind brought her face close to In-gong chest and arms and started sniffing.

"Is it the smell of another spirit? No, it is a little different. It is different from Kafran. Is this the smell of the last flame?"

She tilted her head before hugging In-gong. This was different from her normal hugs. She rubbed herself against his body without stopping.

"Excuse me, Green Wind?"

"I am covering you with my smell again. I hate that Master smells of other natural spirits."

With those words, Green Wind rubbed her cheek against In-gong's shoulder. Rather than being embarrassed, In-gong felt pleased and he laughed.

"Are you jealous right now?"

"Well, I guess."

Felicia would have denied it with a blushing face, but Green Wind was Green Wind. She moved her face closer to In-gong's and her long slender fingers touched In-gong's lips.

"E-excuse me?"

"The strongest trail is over here. I'm going to delete it."

'Delete.' How was she doing to delete it?

Green Wind's face came closer and her breath reached In-gong's lips. Unlike the heat of the last flame, he felt a cool sensation.

It was at that moment...

"Prince!"

The door opened with a loud sound and In-gong hurried away from Green Wind. He stood up and asked Carack,

"Huh? What's going on?"

In-gong sighed as he asked the question. Maybe Carack truly was a protagonist, or maybe it was just the timing.

'No, this is the effect of my Protagonist Correction.'

"Prince?"

"No, nothing. I feel both thankful and angry."

In-gong sat down on the bed again. Carack laughed and approached In-gong.

"Your remark is too exaggerated."

"What's going on?"

In-gong asked bluntly and Carack revealed the purpose of his visit.

"The raccoon person is looking for Prince."

"There aren't enough materials!"

Amita shouted. In-gong had gone to Amita's room who asked to see the remnants of the black dragon.

"The black dragon's leather and bones... aren't good enough?"

"That is the main material! I need a variety of materials to make the equipment! Do you want me to just make shoes with leather?"

In order to create shoes, various materials were needed to fasten the leather together.

In-gong's Dragon Scale Greaves didn't only contain the scales of a red dragon but also light and durable unidentified metals.

Carack asked from next to In-gong,

"Huh? Isn't Raccoon the best blacksmith? But you don't have any materials?"

Carack stimulated Amita's pride as they brandished a fist at his question.

"Your group has too many orders! I need to create more than 10 new pieces of equipment! It is the first time in my life that I have to make such a large amount in a short period of time! As the best blacksmith, I need to take the utmost care with each one! This isn't a factory! There is also a full set! Puoooooh, a full set!"

In-gong imagined Amita sewing busily while sweating furiously and felt like laughing. He said reflexively,

"Thank you."

Amita covered their face with a hand. They gave a long sigh and said,

"Thanks and if you want to get the right equipment, acquire the materials. Not much is needed since you have so much of the main materials."

"What kind of materials are needed? Do we need to bring it from the Demon King's Palace?"

Amita shook their head at Carack's question.

"if you go a little further north< there is a place called Sun Lake. There... Why are you looking at me like that?"

"Ah, nothing. Continue."

Sun Lake was the place where the lair of the elder dragon, Violent Kaltein, was supposed to be. It was going to be his last destination before returning to the Demon King's Palace, but his tasks were now overlapping.

Amita frowned like they were uncertain about In-gong's answer. They took out a tobacco pipe from somewhere and continued,

"Sun Lake has metal creatures wandering around. They are moderately strong, but they shouldn't be a problem for you. Hunt a few of them. In addition to those, I will write down the materials that should be collected."

Amita scribbled on a piece of paper before handing it to Carack. Carack frowned as he read the letters on the piece of paper.

"The letters are too small and are also a little crooked."

"My hands are small."

"Understood. I understand you."

At Carack's answer, Amita pounded the floor with their tail like they were frustrated.

"Hu, I am going to die. Go. I need to start the work in advance."

"I understand. Then I will be going."

In-gong and Carack smiled before leaving Amita's room.

"Shutra— I smell something different coming from Shutra."



# Chapter 96

## Sign #2

In-gong moved to the hall at the entrance to the small temple and brought the group together.

The three children of the demon King, Caitlin, Felicia and Silvan, as well as Seira, Delia, Daphne, Carack and In-gong combined to make up eight people.

“Shutra— I smell something different coming from Shutra.”

When everyone had gathered together, Caitlin suddenly sniffed the air. She closed her eyes to focus on the smell and her nose neared In-gong’s shoulder.

Felicia, who was standing to the right of In-gong, laughed at Caitlin.

“Caitlin, that nose... is it a dog’s nose?”

It was slightly rude, but Caitlin was a werewolf lycanthrope.

In fact, lycanthropes generally had a good sense of smell.

As Caitlin continued to smell him, Felicia also seemed to be interested and moved her face closer to In-gong’s shoulder.

“Hrmm? It smells good. It’s like a fruity smell. Is it a gandharva?”

The gandharva were a species excellent in dancing and singing, so they smelled sweet generally. Just as Caitlin was a mixed werewolf, In-gong was also a mixed gandharva. So, it was natural for him to show the characteristics of a gandharva.

In-gong made a strange expression and tried to maintain a steady posture as the two beautiful females continued to smell him.

Silvan looked at him with envy and poked Felicia’s back.

"Felicia, doesn't Oppa smell good as well?"

"It is too much. Sprinkle less perfume."

Felicia replied without looking back and Silvan crumbled. She then continued speaking without even moving her head,

"Caitlin seems to be correct? I feel like I smell something different than usual as well."

Her voice was filled with confidence. Just then, a new voice was heard from behind In-gong.

"Didn't I erase it?"

It was Green Wind. She took a solid form and rubbed against In-gong.

"Green Wind? Erase what?"

After hearing Felicia's question, Caitlin stopped sniffing him as well and lifted her head.

On the other hand, Carack interrupted them just as In-gong felt the mood turn strange again.

"Wake up, Prince."

Carack laughed as he raised the fallen Silvan with his big hands.

"I am Prince's aide. I can't afford to let Prince look like that."

Carack glanced at In-gong who was situated between the two beauties and nodded.

In-gong shouted loudly and organized the situation,

"Well, let's prepare to start heading towards Sun Lake now. As I said earlier, the first reason is to gather materials for Amita to use. The second reason, everybody should know it already?"

Green Wind stepped back upon In-gong's order and Caitlin and Felicia also increased the distance.

Fortunately, Felicia followed In-gong's change in topic.

"It is good. Weren't there materials in the archive room of Thunderdoom Fortress? In the first place, I had already reported that I was going to make a survey map of Sun Lake."

She couldn't make a false report to the Demon King's Palace, so it was good that they would be able to solve the problem.

"The ruins under the lake... I am really looking forward to it."

Caitlin had a dreamy expression on her face.

Carack asked,

"But what about Karma? She will come back with assistance in a few days. Is it okay to leave the response to the raccoon?"

Two people had gone to call for support. They had already contacted Robin with no problem using the telecommunication machine on Silvan's flying ship. However, Karma was already moving to Spider Forest with the rangers, so it was a problem.

He knew her feet were very fast, but she had actually come back in three days. It seemed like she had worked very hard.

They needed someone to stay behind and explain the situation to Karma and the lycanthrope rangers.

It would be fortunate if Amita could fulfill that role, but like Carack said, there were some doubts.

"It is a little too much."

Felicia came to a conclusion and glanced at Silvan.

"Silvan, can you leave a few crew members behind? We need to tell our party the

situation as well as protect Spider Forest.”

"Hmm, the hardest thing to prevent is a sudden raid after everything is over. I will leave a squad behind with Sepira.”

Silvan struck his chest with his fist and struck a pose after talking. Then Carack opened his mouth,

"Is Sepira the deputy captain? The woman with purple hair?”

"Yes, she is Oppa’s aide. By the way, you’ve only seen her once and yet you remembered her?”

Seira’s, Delia’s and Daphne’s eyes sharpened at Felicia’s question.

Carack answered with an unconcerned look,

"Personnel identification is essential. It is important to remember any new faces. Doesn’t it increase the risk if you don’t know all the faces? Spies can mix in. It is better to remember faces than names.”

It seemed like he had remembered the faces and features of Silvan’s crew members.

Silvan watched Carack with a bemused expression and asked Felicia,

"Felicia, is that really an orc?”

"I’ve always wondered that. I want to investigate it just once.”

They didn’t know if Felicia’s words were a joke or a genuine answer, so Delia said with a smile,

"Carack is very competent. He has the sense of an aide.”

“Really amazing.”

Seira expressed herself in a manner similar to Caitlin. Daphne didn’t stay still either.

"Dependable. He’s a really dependable guy.”

Silvan gazed at Carack in a manner similar to when he looked at In-gong. Carack just laughed and scratched his head.

"I have to take responsibility as an aide."

Delia's, Seira's and Daphne's expressions became warmer. In-gong just laughed and Felicia summed up the situation again.

"The story has finished, so shall we start straight away? Silvan, please."

Silvan nodded immediately when Felicia asked him.

"Leave it to Oppa."

He left the small temple and gathered his crew. Felicia laughed as she watched Silvan and the crew move as fast as lightning.

"Oppa is easy to handle."

In-gong pretended to be deaf as he left the small temple with Carack. Silvan's flying ship, the Black Flame Dragon, was preparing its anchor for departure.

Then after 20 minutes...

"Black Flame Dragon ho! Start!"

"Start!"

"Start!"

Silvan drew his sword and shouted. All the crew members shouted along as well. The sails spread out widely while the magic power engine was activated and the flying ship started to move upwards.

"Good wind! Fly with the wind, Black Flame Dragon ho!"

"Fly!"

“Fly!”

The crew members blushed while Sepira and the squad on the ground felt like they were lucky.

"How shameful."

Felicia muttered as though she represented the hearts of all the crew members.

The Black Flame Dragon, the flagship of Silvan Doomblade, was one of the dark elves' sacred ships.

Its original name was Black Ark.

The dark elf society was centered on females, so a woman was to take over the family. In the Doomblade family, the best daughter inherited the clan while the best son was given the Black Ark. This had been going on for generations.

The son of a son wasn't a member of the Doomblade family; this meant the family line was followed through the mother's line. So, the Black Ark was to return to the Doomblade family again.

Silvan had inherited the Black Ark from Lionel Doomblade, the older brother of 3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade.

In other words, it had been less than a year since Silvan had inherited the flying ship.

Just like with a novice driver, there were some problems during the flight but it was safe on the Black Flame Dragon. A trip that would have originally taken a few days took only a few hours.

In-gong tied his waist with a safety strap and went to the railing. The altitude was at approximately 200 meters, so it was windy, but there were no problems looking out.

Sun Lake...

It was a place that In-gong had visited quite a few times in Knight Saga.

The metal monsters Amita wanted them to catch were called caltos. They had natural waterproofing, so they could survive in the water despite their metal bodies.

Equipment made from the caltos' metal was automatically waterproof, so it was indeed usable as a material if handled properly.

'I caught a lot in Knight Saga.'

Thanks to that, he remembered their weaknesses clearly. They were moderately strong, but In-gong was confident that he could deal with a few of them on his own.

'Divine power.'

It was one of the four powers that existed in Knight Saga: Aura; psychic power; magic power; and divine power.

At the same time, it was also the weakness of the caltos.

Thanks to the alliance with the last flame, In-gong had gained divine power.

'Magic power and divine power are hard to use together.'

They didn't mix well.

Just like there were several gods in the Human World, the Demon World had several varieties of demonic gods.

Flora, who managed In-gong's mansion at the Demon King's Palace, was a devout follower of Camilla who was the goddess of dreams and shadows.

Nevertheless, the reason why Zephyr didn't use divine power was because it caused a dissonance with his magic power.

'But I'm different.'

In-gong glanced at the divine power in his right hand with interest. There was a gentle green light that reminded him of the last flame.

In-gong added magic power to it. Just like aura, the white magic power started to mix with the green light.

Protagonist Body.

It created a harmony between Enkidu and Ainkel's powers, which were exact opposites.

What synergy effect would be caused if divine power and magic power were harmonized? If he mixed aura and magic power, there would be three combinations of aura, magic power and divine power.

In-gong breathed deeply and turned his attention to somewhere else. A gigantic, golden lake glowed beneath the red and yellow sky.

It glowed gold during both day and night, so it was called Sun Lake.

The metal monsters were the only ones that they would meet at the lake.

However, there was a monster called the gatekeeper of Sun Lake. It was a type of boss monster.

'It is about time for it to show up.'

As the lake glowed under the twilight sky, a head poked out of the lake.

Today was In-gong's day. He had always denied it, but today was different.

Would the attempt work?

"Sea serpent? In the lake?"

The crew member at the front gasped with astonishment while In-gong formed fists.

The emergency bell rang in In-gong's ears as all the crew rushed to the deck in a combat stance.

"Sea serpent?"



Silvan stared at the lake with a serious expression. The sea serpent was staring at the Black Flame Dragon like it was nervous.

A sea serpent...

It was a sea dragon that lived in the sea.

The length of the sea serpent was dozens of meters long and it was known as a powerful monster.

The sea serpent was the guardian protecting the entrance to Sun Lake. It was a very strong monster and tricky for humans to deal with since its home ground was the lake.

However, today was different.

"Incarnation of Fire."

He used a skill given by the last flame.

At that moment, green flames appeared on the Dragon Scale Greaves. In-gong then equipped Earth Quaker and White Eagle and loosened the safety strap around his waist.

"Shutra?"

Silvan stared at In-gong while Felicia covered her face with a fan. Instead of being astonished like Silvan, she simply looked at In-gong with a relaxed expression.

"Are you going?"

"I'm going. We need to investigate under the lake."

In-gong replied with a laugh while Silvan still seemed like he didn't know what was going on. Carack was grinning widely as In-gong stretched out his hand into the air.

"Ascalon."

A masterpiece of the Dragon Slayer series.

It was the enemy of dragons and the weapon that had taken down the Black Dragon Partizan in Thunderdoom Fortress.

Earth Quaker and Ascalon were now combined. In-gong held the white lance and looked at Caitlin.

“Noona, sorry.”

Caitlin tilted her head at his words and In-gong really felt apologetic.

He didn’t want to do it, but it was the easiest way to finish things in one shot. He had to mobilize everything he could.

Dragon Blood...

The power of a dragon humanoid.

Earth Quaker roared and In-gong’s aura burst out like it had exploded. At the same time, Ascalon reacted to the dragon power and started to affect In-gong.

He had barely endured it in Thunderdoom Fortress, but this time was different.

He had the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core.

In-gong squeezed out Caitlin’s aura like he had done during the battle against the guardian. The power heading toward In-gong was cut off with the augmented aura.

Caitlin was startled by the sudden loss of aura, but it was only for a brief moment. Her lips twisted and she said quietly,

“Shutra is too much.”

Why did her voice sound so cute when it was filled with resentment? Moreover, Caitlin was smiling as she said it.

In-gong concentrated the white and blue aura on Ascalon. The power of a dragon humanoid and the green divine flames came together as well.

In-gong turned away from Silvan, who was still staring blankly, and climbed onto the

railing.

"I will be going."

"Go safely."

The moment that Carack answered, In-gong jumped down. He charged the lance while falling toward the sea serpent.

[Title: 'Killed a Dragon in One Shot' has been acquired.]

# Chapter 97

## Sign #3

The eyes of everyone on the Black Flame Dragon's deck widened in surprised. Among the crew members, there were those who cried out in shock and admiration.

The 9th Prince had jumped from the deck and the lake exploded.

Water droplets rose up high into the sky and glowed a beautiful red and yellow. As the large mass of water returned to where it was supposed to be, the body of the sea serpent smashed into the lake.

One hit.

Most of the crew members hadn't witnessed the moment of attack, but they understood instinctively.

It was a fight that had ended in one shot. 9th Prince had taken care of the sea serpent, known as the dragon of the sea, with one blow.

'How on earth...?'

The crew swallowed their saliva and looked at each other. A few of them looked at Silvan, their captain, and the strongest one on the ship. However, Silvan wasn't much different and was also looking down with a lost expression.

Silvan had strengthened his eyesight with aura and was able to see In-gong through the remains of the sea serpent.

In-gong was standing on White Eagle, not in the water.

He waved to Silvan who waved back reflexively. Then Silvan glanced at Felicia and Caitlin standing next to him. It was a useless reasoning, but it seemed like In-gong wasn't waving to Silvan but to Felicia and Caitlin.

“How?”

Silvan asked Felicia with a large wave of his hand. He didn't know what else to say.

Felicia smiled widely at Silvan. She also seemed quite surprised by the attack as there was some confusion on her face.

However, she wasn't like Silvan and the crew members. She opened her eyes wide and replied,

“Didn't I tell you? Our Shutra is great. He can remove a sea snake in one shot.”

If Chris was there, he would have questioned it. However, the person here was not Chris but Caitlin.

"That's right, Shutra is amazing."

Caitlin nodded in agreement. The two of them boasted proudly.

Silvan felt dizzy and headed down to below the deck. He ordered the crew to lower the Black Flame Dragon.

‘Master, are you okay?’

Green Wind's worried voice was heard in In-gong's ears. In-gong then glanced at Earth Quaker and Ascalon in his right hand and nodded. It wasn't obvious from a distance, but In-gong's face was pale.

“I'm fine. It's just that my arms are hurting.”

His arms would have been shattered if he hadn't reinforced them with aura. He had used an incredibly powerful attack, so the burden on his arms were enormous.

In-gong stored Earth Quaker and Ascalon in the inventory. He looked up at the sky and saw the Black Flame Dragon descending slowly.

'Master, I'm sorry that White Eagle is so narrow. It might be difficult, but you should

stay standing until the ship comes down.'

"No, Green Wind did really well. It is thanks to Green Wind blowing the wind properly that I was able to hit it in one shot. Good job."

In-gong said with a laugh and Green Wind appeared in a semi-solid form in the air. She looked down at White Eagle with a restless face, but it was cramped even with just In-gong on there. Two people might be able to stand if they stuck together, but In-gong could lose his balance and it would be difficult to achieve.

'Uhh, I want to be stroked and praised, but I'll have to wait until we return to land. When we return, don't forget to give me praise. I'll save it for now.'

Green Wind declared with a serious expression and In-gong laughed.

"Yes, yes."

Sadly for Green Wind, In-gong could only stroke her head moderately before looking at the sea serpent's body floating on the lake.

The sea serpent was an enormous monster that was dozens of metres in length. It wasn't as smart as a dragon, but the sea serpent was clever enough to use a few psychic and magic powers instinctively.

In Knight Saga, he had faced considerable trouble when dealing with the sea serpent.

Yet he had just taken care of the serpent in one shot.

'Dragon's Bane.'

It was the name of Ascalon's super special built-in move.

'Super Special Move Control' was a skill that allowed him to use the super special moves built into each equipment.

Earth Quaker and White Eagle weren't the only ones among In-gong's equipment with a super special move. Ascalon, the best weapon in Thunderdoom Fortress, also had a super special move.

'A super special move designed for big monsters and dragons... Indeed, as expected of Ascalon.'

As the name suggested, Dragon's Bane was a super special move designed to bring ruin to a dragon. As the appearance of Ascalon suggested, Dragon's Bane was a technique expressed through charging up the lance and was perfect for a one-hit attack.

'I can't look back when charging the lance.'

It needed a courageous rush to pierce through the target. This was a technique that caused his blood to boil.

'A combination with White Eagle?'

As he had White Eagle, he jumped at an altitude of 200 meters. At the same time as he fell, he boarded White Eagle and charged the lance while riding White Eagle like a surfboard.

'I'm glad that Green Wind can steer with the wind.'

She was able to properly control the course of White Eagle. Moreover, Green Wind controlled the wind as well. So, In-gong could just focus on the attack.

In-gong exhaled. Thanks to Catilin's aura, he was able to suppress Ascalon to a certain extent. However, it still had an effect.

Dragon Blood consumed enormous amounts of aura and he used divine power as well, so he was exhausted. If he hadn't levelled up after killing the sea serpent, his legs would have probably lost their strength.

'My only regret is the monstrous size.'

Ascalon was too large to use against people. If the opponent was Gerard or the guardian, they could avoid the charging lance easily.

'Well, there are some measures against people.'

He had Gigantic Piston, Arang, Earth Quaker and the super special move, True

Destruction.

'I am anticipating the third equipment.'

The elder dragon, Violent Kaltein...

What type of equipment would it be? What super special move would be embedded in it?

"Shutra!"

Felicia's call came from near him. In-gong launched White Eagle toward the Black Flame Dragon that was resting on the surface of the lake.

It wasn't the applause of the soldiers, Felicia's admiration or Carack's easy praise that was waiting for In-gong on the deck.

"Shutra is too much."

Caitlin said with a serious face as she crossed her arms. Her tone was still cute, but In-gong made a serious expression.

"Sorry."

"I'm not an aura supply for Shutra."

"I know. I'm really sorry."

He had taken her aura without seeking prior consent. Especially since this time, he had no excuses because he had simply wanted to see Caitlin's reaction.

In-gong apologized again and Caitlin finally shrugged. She continued speaking with a big smile,

"From now on, make sure you tell me in advance before taking my aura."

"So, it is okay to ask and then take it?"



"It is okay as long as you tell me in advance."

Caitlin's gentle voice and appearance was enough to call her a saint. However, In-gong didn't stop there.

"What if there is an emergency?"

Just like when they fought the guardian, there would be situations when they wouldn't be able to speak.

Caitlin frowned at In-gong's question.

"If there is an emergency, you can just take it."

"I understand, Noona. I'll do that."

Caitlin felt strange as In-gong laughed loudly. Seira tapped on Caitlin's shoulder and said gently,

"Princess is too soft on 9th Prince."

"Yes, you play well together."

Felicia clicked her tongue and immediately switched the topic.

"By the way, you did a big thing. Even if you do have Ascalon, taking out a sea serpent in one shot... I was surprised. Aren't you much stronger than Silvan or Chris?"

When In-gong rushed toward the sea serpent, it had been like a meteor falling down from the sky. The sight of the lake water rising up dozens of meters was spectacular but required tremendous physical power.

Silvan flinched at Felicia's direct comparison and spoke while touching his right eye,

"Um, if I take this eyepatch off..."

His voice was small and had no strength. Then In-gong spoke, comforting Silvan unknowingly.

"As Noona said, the sea serpent is a dragon. Moreover, the technique from Ascalon itself is very large... and strength isn't just about one hit, is it? I still have a long way to go to reach Silvan hyung's and Chris hyung's levels. Isn't that right, Silvan hyung?"

His tone was calm and comforting.

Silvan hesitated for a moment before nodding.

"Uhh, yes. Shutra is great."

Felicia laughed at the awkward compliment.

At that moment, Carack interrupted the conversation and saved Silvan.

"By the way, what are we going to do with the body of the sea serpent? Should we take it to the raccoon as well?"

Among the dragons, the sea serpents were a fairly strong species.

Although sea serpents weren't as good as dragons, it was clear that both the scales and bones of sea serpents were advanced materials.

"It is great, but its large size... Silvan hyung, will it be possible to transport it using the Black Flame Dragon?"

Silvan's shoulders lifted up at In-gong's question and he replied in a voice filled with pride,

"That isn't a problem. The output of the Black Flame Dragon is great. It is possible to carry far greater monsters than that."

"Then we should move it to dry land. Otherwise, various creatures will flock toward the body of the sea serpent."

Once a mighty beast died, the prey would gather for the meat.

Fish and other minor underwater creatures had already gathered there.

Felicia asked,

"Shouldn't we prepare for the caltos? We came here for that purpose."

Although they weren't as great as the sea serpent, the caltos were strong as well. Their entire bodies were made of solid metal, so they were difficult to deal with.

"Uhh, I hope we don't feel the purple aura from the caltos."

Carack spoke in a small and anxious voice. In-gong turned toward Carack and said,

"Don't say those words."

"I really hope it doesn't happen."

Carack spoke with a serious expression and fortunately, his wish came true.

"Starting right now, I will explain the caltos strategy."

As the Black Flame Dragon headed to the shore of the lake, In-gong started an impromptu lecture. His students were Felicia, Caitlin, Silvan and the other combatants.

"The caltos are made of metal, but their entire bodies aren't metal — only the surfaces of their bodies are made of metal. Just like any other lifeform, their insides are made up of flesh and blood."

The caltos were monsters with the bodies of lions and the heads of crocodiles. Their entire bodies were covered with green metal scales that edged close to black.

In-gong picked up a knife and pointed at the drawing of a caltos that Delia had done.

"It is resistant to both physical and magic attacks, so the most effective way is to attack the insides. The caltos' big mouth is its best weapon as well as its weakness."

"So, we attack when it opens its mouth?"

Felicia raised her hand and asked a question. In-gong nodded straight away.

"Yes, the caltos have a habit of biting. We will take advantage of that."

Felicia's expression changed subtly at In-gong's answer because it was a difficult strategy.

In-gong smiled at her reaction and continued explaining,

"The next thing that works well is ice magic. The caltos are very weak in the cold, so their movements will become extremely slow. In other words, we will slow down their movements with ice magic and then aim for their mouths."

Felicia nodded as she finally understood the strategy.

"Then that means I will play an active role."

In the party, Felicia was the most capable one with regards to ice magic. However, at that moment, Silvan shook his head.

"Hmm, this is an interesting strategy, but I have a more effective and efficient approach."

Silvan suddenly pulled out his sword and a dark aura flowed all around it. A blade of sharp aura molded around the sword.

It was an aura blade that could cut anything.

Clearly, this was an area that Silvan was an expert in.

"My aura blade can cut through metal. Their hard shells won't interfere at all."

It made a lot of sense. Silvan's aura blade could cut through the caltos' shells easily.

Felicia joined her hands together and made a sound like she was in awe,

"You're really awesome, Oppa."

Silvan's title was changed to oppa, but Silvan felt a sense of discomfort instead of gladness.

Felicia continued speaking,

"Then we will leave the caltos hunting to Oppa. I will cheer you on as you make these great actions."

It was awkward and an obvious lie, but Silvan was convinced. Silvan tapped his chest with a bright smile.

"Leave it to Oppa, Felicia."

"Yes, please. I believe in Oppa."

"Okay, then I'll be going now. Caltos, be prepared!"

Silvan shouted loudly and jumped from the deck. With his cloak streaming behind him as he ran, it was a truly imposing scene.

Felicia gazed at Silvan for a moment before turning back to everyone else.

"Now, we can have dinner and rest. We need to be in the best condition to enter the lake tomorrow."

It had gone as she had expected.

Caitlin blinked with a confused expression and Felicia wrapped an arm around her shoulder.

"Caitlin, Oppa is going to deal with this. Okay?"

Caitlin's eyes just widened with shock.

Carack clicked his tongue.

"Ah, poor 5th Prince."

"Well, he looks good."

In-gong watched Silvan for a moment before shrugging and turning his interest away.

He had been worried about meeting Silvan but that worry had disappeared.

'Felicia handles him well.'

In-gong laughed and turned towards Sun Lake. The golden glow from the surface of the lake was spreading through the darkness.

# Chapter 98

## Sign #4

Silvan worked really hard. He struggled until late at night and caught 19 caltos which was about twice of Amita's requirements.

Felicia rewarded Silvan by kissing his cheeks and his shoulders expressed his happiness. It was a happy night for everyone.

The next morning...

Silvan ordered the crew members to collect small materials while the ruins exploration began.

"There are three major ways to explore underwater ruins. One is to split the water while the other two ways involve entering the water."

In a world where magic existed, mysterious and radical methods could be used. Felicia folded down one of her fingers and explained further,

"However, the first method is hardly ever used. The amount of magic power needed is too much and if it goes wrong, it can destroy the environment. Due to this, I mainly use the other two methods."

As Felicia explained, Delia handed out a magic tool that looked like a bar split in two.

"It is a tool that allows you to breathe in water if you put the middle part in your mouth. It consumes magic power constantly but if you have the magic power, it can be used forever. I have prepared it just in case."

It was a familiar yet unfamiliar tool for In-gong. It was used for support in Knight Saga, but this was the first time he had actually used it.

"Then does that mean we are going to use another way?"

"Too sharp. That's right. We'll use the third method. I am a specialist in ruins exploration after all."

Felicia teased in reply to Carack's question and chanted a spell. Every time she pointed at a party member, a large air bubble formed.

"Wah."

Caitlin's eyes shone as she looked at the air bubble around her. She touched the air bubble carefully like she was afraid it would pop, but it didn't burst that easily.

Felicia, who had gained verification due to Caitlin's little experiment, grinned at the air bubbles and continued to explain,

"Put the magic tool in your mouth just in case something happens. If you go inside, make sure to follow my lead. Got it?"

"Understood, Unni."

Caitlin responded by putting the magic tool in her mouth. The rest of the group nodded and Felicia, who then confirmed everyone's condition, started to move.

Felicia was used to exploring dungeons with a small group of elites.

The party included In-gong, Carack, Felicia, Delia, Caitlin, Seira, Silvan and Daphne, totalling eight people.

While the surface was golden, the water was quite dark. Felicia couldn't see that far, so she chose a gentle light instead of a bright one in order to avoid provoking the creatures in the lake.

'I have to look closely.'

It was a lake where a huge monster like the sea serpent had lived. It was clear that not only small and beautiful fish but also various aquatic monsters would live here. It was psychologically quite burdensome to face a group of monsters in the water when they couldn't move freely; this was the so-called phobia of the deep sea.

In-gong focused on the mini-map instead of the darkness to see if any underwater



creatures would pop out. The mini-map was especially useful in an environment like this where not all of In-gong's senses could be used.

'Okay, this looks like the entrance.'

After finding the entrance, In-gong signalled to Felicia and started to lead the way. He had found a path in the water and, except for Silvan, the group followed In-gong without questioning it.

The entrance to the ruins that In-gong found was in between a large pile of rocks. Curiously enough, there was no water inside like it was blocked somewhere. There seemed to be enough air inside as though there was ventilation somewhere.

"Indeed, Shutra."

Felicia released the air bubbles and made a sound of admiration. She had experienced In-gong's guidance abilities several times. However, this was underwater and not on land, so it was natural that she was surprised.

"I will take the lead from now on. Felicia, give me directions."

Silvan drew his sword and stepped forward. If it was just about combat power, it would be convincing since Silvan was the strongest in the group.

However, Felicia shook her head.

"Shutra is the best in this area. Shutra and Carack will be at the front while Oppa will protect us from the rear. I will be in the middle with Daphne and Delia. Caitlin and Seira will be behind us."

Silvan seemed somewhat uncomfortable, but the rest of the party nodded like it was natural. So, Silvan didn't object and moved to the back of the party.

After arranging the formation, the party started exploring the ruins. As it had been recorded in Thunderdoom Fortress, this was Violent Kaltein's lair, so the space was big.

The party moved slowly around the ruins without any haste.

He couldn't confirm when they were from but there were signs of fighting everywhere.

There were places where the ruin had collapsed and the bones of the invaders and dungeon guardians were scattered all over.

Unlike Thunderdoom Fortress, there were no remaining dungeon guardians or traps.

Felicia frowned as she investigated the signs of magic power remaining in the ruins.

"This ruin... It seems like the function has been lost for at least a thousand years. It is much more serious than Thunderdoom Fortress that had only been abandoned for hundreds of years."

'A thousand years.'

In-gong was reminded of Ainkel who he had seen at Enger Plains. She was also killed a thousand years ago.

The Great Enkidu had left his lair for some unknown place, but what about the Violent Kaltein? Had he also departed his lair? Or had he been killed like Ainkel?

Additionally, if he had been killed, who had the strength to murder an elder dragon with the power of a god?

In-gong recalled the slab he had seen at Fort Thunderdoom. The four people standing against the six elder dragons...

Conquest, War, Death and Famine.

The last flame had said that the Knights of the Apocalypse were those who craved destruction and wanted to bring about the end.

If so, was it them?

Had the four knights killed Ainkel and Kaltein a thousand years ago?

If that was the case, why?

'Master.'

Green Wind called out to In-gong. In-gong then realized that he had been walking without realizing it.

The party was standing in front of a large mural.

In-gong couldn't tell if it was a coincidence or something else, but he raised his head and looked at the mural. Many areas were broken or exposed to the flow of time, so a clear form couldn't be recognized.

"There is some writing."

Felicia approached the wall excitedly but soon became upset. They were characters that she was seeing for the first time.

In-gong examined the characters. They weren't dwarf characters or dragon characters.

It was completely different. These characters seemed to be much older than the other two.

[Extinct Native Species's Characters Lv1 has been learnt.]

A woman's voice ran in his ears and In-gong swallowed his saliva. The word 'extinct' stood out in his mind.

Just like the mural, the writing was badly damaged, so no proper sentences could be read. In-gong read a few words in his head.

'Riders of destruction.

'Collapse of the six pillars.

'It couldn't be kept.

'10,000 years.

'The end ---'

They were all negative words. In-gong finished reading the words and looked at the mural. There was something large and red painted there, but the damage made it unclear.

The extinction of a native species...

These were records about destruction.

'Master, I feel a strong draw. Focus on the equipment of the elder dragons.'

Green Wind whispered again. In-gong looked at White Eagle and Earth Quaker. Despite the fact that they were separate powers, both of them showed a green, red and yellow light.

The gazes of the rest of the party moved to In-gong and he concentrated on the equipment of the elder dragons like Green Wind told him to. A path formed in his head and he moved accordingly. Soon, he arrived in front of a small room.

As In-gong arrived there, the wall opened automatically and a small altar appeared. Its structure was similar to the dwarf altar where he had acquired Earth Quaker.

"Violent Kaltein..."

Felicia muttered in a small voice. Above the altar, there was a dark blue cloak shining with a white light.

It was obviously an equipment of the elder dragon. The excited Silvan reached out to the altar, but he couldn't touch it. He was blocked by an invisible wall.

Felicia wasn't much different. She was also forced to take a step back from the wall.

Caitlin naturally looked to In-gong who stretched his hands forward with the power of Conquest. The transparent wall blocked In-gong's hand, but it was only for a moment.

It was like with Ainkel's dragon heart. As though it had been hoping to be conquered, Kaltein's barrier accepted In-gong's rule.

After seeing In-gong walk through the transparent wall, Silvan closed his eyes and

tried to approach the altar again, but it was useless. This invisible wall just blocked his way once more.

Night Watch.

That was the name of the cloak.

As soon as In-gong reached out to it, Night Watch moved to In-gong's shoulders. Naturally, Night Watch's abilities popped up in his mind.

[Mental power has increased by 10.]

[Magic power has increased by 10.]

[Agility has increased by 10.]

[Built-in skill: Blink Lv3 has been acquired.]

[The resistance level for all attributes have been increased by one.]

[Flying Ability Lv1 has been acquired.]

[Awakening - Black Ghost has been acquired.]

However, this wasn't the end. Night Watch recognized In-gong's fighting style. A cloak was lovely but cumbersome for someone who fought with their hands and feet.

Therefore, Night Watch changed its appearance. It moved like a dark blue liquid and took a spot around In-gong's neck and shoulders. It was similar to a muffler that stretched to the back instead of the front.

In-gong stepped into the air. He couldn't feel any strength like how he would when stepping on stairs and instead felt like his body was floating.

'Ah, no. The meaning of my existence...!'

In-gong smiled as he heard Green Wind's cry. Completely free flight was unreasonable, but he was able to move somewhat freely in the air.

"Once again, Shutra is the owner. I was afraid of this."

Felicia laughed bitterly. Caitlin never felt any greed as she watched In-gong with shining eyes.

It was great that In-gong had found the artifact. Additionally, the current situation meant that it was impossible for Silvan and others to feel discontent about it.

Felicia had expected this and Silvan had been rejected by the artifact. So, he had to stand back with a sour face.

Felicia and Caitlin came up to In-gong as soon as he landed on the ground. Even if they didn't own Night Watch, it was possible to look at it.

Silvan sulked in a corner for a few minutes.

Suddenly, there was a flash from Carack, Seira and Delia. Carack thrashed around while Seira and Delia pulled out a small pendant with familiar movements. After confirming the colour of the light coming from the pendant, they exchanged glances and nodded with a serious expression.

"Delia?"

Felicia's voice was somewhat uneasy as she was surprised by the unusual atmosphere. However, Delia spoke in an orderly manner,

"There was an emergency contact from the Demon King's Palace. It's an order for everyone to convene."

Just by listening to her words, it was obvious this was a rare incident. Carack watched the light from the pendant and stuttered,

"Uh... the princes and princesses must gather at the Demon King's Palace 10 days from now."

Carack, Seira and Delia all received this as aides to the children of the demon king.

Carack looked at Seira to see if he was right and she nodded. Seira then told Caitlin,

"It isn't a big deal since we have a fair amount of time to gather. Don't worry."

Caitlin gave a small nod. As Seira said, 10 days was ample time, but they also needed to meet Amita and then Chris.

"We will leave the ruins exploration up to here. Let's return to the Black Flame Dragon now."

Silvan spoke and moved out of the room. Felicia took a deep breath and glanced at In-gong with uneasy eyes. In-gong smiled back reassuringly.

However, In-gong was anxious as well as it was rare for all the children of the demon king to be summoned in Knight Saga.

'The subjugation of the lycanthropes.'

It was the only incident that allowed the player to assemble everyone.

In-gong looked at Caitlin's back as she left the room. Pushing his anxiety down deep inside him, he stepped forward.

# Chapter 99

## Summons

Felicia had taken a few steps away from the room containing Night Watch when she stopped abruptly and looked back.

Caitlin, who was walking slightly behind the group with In-gong, wondered what was going on. Felicia then opened her mouth and said,

"Hey, is there no time at all? I want to take a look at this floor at least. We might not get to look around next time."

Her face was filled with regret.

Silvan sighed at Felicia's attitude and called out her name with the tone of an aggravated older brother.

"Felicia."

"Shutra, what do you think?"

However, Felicia just talked over him and called out to Shutra instead. Felicia glanced at In-gong who replied with a frown,

"As Seira said, 10 days is an ample amount of time. And to a certain extent, Felicia noona is correct. To be honest, isn't it a little disappointing?"

This was the lair of an elder dragon.

Until now, they had been to places related to an elder dragon, but this was the first lair.

In the case of the Great Enkidu, it had been a place to store treasures rather than Enkidu's lair. Additionally, they hadn't even visited Watcher Ainkel's place.

Felicia's expression brightened as In-gong sided with her.



"Isn't it? Shutra thinks so as well? Isn't it a shame to just leave?"

Felicia was more emotional than usual due to her regret and desperation. It was pretty cute, but In-gong spoke without losing his composure.

"However, Noona, will you really just look around? My guess is that we've seen half of this floor. Can't it be delayed for a few days?"

He could roughly guess the scale of the place through the mini-map.

Of course, he couldn't reveal the basis of the information, but the group regarded it as true.

"Felicia."

Silvan called Felicia's name once again, but she ignored it.

Felicia folded her arms and shook her head.

"Uhh, won't it be okay just for today? Amita... we can leave at night."

Their transportation wasn't a carriage but a flying ship. She felt sorry for Silvan's crew members, but they could move at any time, morning or night. Taking a break wasn't a problem either. They could rest while the flying ship was moving.

Felicia gazed at In-gong with earnest eyes and Delia, who was also interested in exploring ruins, had a similar expression.

Would In-gong allow it?

As everyone paid attention to In-gong, Silvan once again felt isolated.

In this situation, shouldn't Felicia be seeking permission from Silvan who was her older brother and the master of the flying ship?

Why was she asking permission from the youngest prince, Shutra?

As Silvan floundered about, In-gong sighed like it couldn't be helped and said with a

smile,

“That should be fine.”

They were supposed to return to the Demon King’s Palace within 10 days. Half a day wouldn’t be a detrimental hindrance.

Moreover, In-gong was interested in the areas he hadn’t seen yet.

He had achieved his goal after acquiring Kaltein’s Night Watch, but it would be a shame to go back with just that.

‘Maybe I can get more information.’

The records of a destroyed species...

And information about who attacked Violent Kaltein.

Neither were important at the moment, but it wasn’t bad to know.

As In-gong gave permission, Felicia jumped up and cheered. Her face was bright like a young child.

“Yes! Okay! Then let’s look around!”

“Felicia.”

Silvan called Felicia for the third time. This time, Felicia did something worse than ignoring him.

"Oppa, can go back to the flying ship first? Do you know how to use the magic tool that allows you to breathe underwater?"

Silvan’s shoulders sagged at her words and he said,

"I'll just stay with you."

"Okay."

Felicia hummed lightly as she walked toward a path they hadn't been to yet. As everyone followed, Carack patted Silvan's shoulder lightly.

"Prince, cheer up."

The orc's tone was inappropriate despite being Shutra's aide, but Silvan didn't rebuke him for the rudeness.

Was it a type of charm that somehow couldn't be resisted? It was actually comforting.

Carack patted his shoulders a few more times and Silvan stepped forward with a grim expression.

After following Felicia for three hours, the party accomplished a lot in Kaltein's lair.

Nothing else at the Night Watch's standard was found, but there was a considerable amount of artifacts, gold and silver as well as archeological data that was more valuable than gold to Felicia.

No records related to the extinct species were found, but In-gong was also satisfied. Thanks to being well instructed by the sword duke on dungeon exploration, he was able to get his hands on a considerable amount of gold and silver.

He already had quite a lot of gold packed, but it never hurt to have more.

In the final stretch of the exploration, they found a staircase leading down. Felicia made a pitiful expression, but it was impossible to delay any further.

He didn't know why but Silvan was also sulking, so the dark elf siblings looked strangely cute and pitiful.

However, In-gong urged Felicia with a decisive expression and the party was able to leave Kaltein's lair on time.

"Lift up the anchor and spread the sails. We are going back to Spider Forest now. Soar, soar! Black Flame Dragon ho!"

Silvan cried out towards the sky from the deck of the flying ship. Although it was eccentric, it was what Silvan always did, so the crew members rushed to depart without paying any attention.

Then after half a day...

Once it was close to dawn, the party was able to reach Spider Forest.

"It is insane to come at this hour."

At the entrance of the small temple, Amita glared with sleepy eyes while being carried by Daphne.

Instead of asking, 'Aren't raccoons originally nocturnal?', In-gong looked at the person standing next to Daphne.

"I'm back, Your Highness."

"I'm back as well. Good job, Karma."

Karma smiled at In-gong's reply, but she looked awkward. She had gone to call for support, but everything had already ended. As a result, it seemed like she didn't help at all.

Carack sent Karma a look of consolation and she smiled.

It was at that moment that Daphne, who was carrying Amita, gazed at the Black Flame Dragon with wide eyes.

"This is... Is this perhaps a dragon?"

Silver scales shone in the light.

Amita narrowed their eyes and shook their head from within Daphne's arms.

"No, it is a sea serpent. The owner of Sun Lake was one, but he is gone now."

Amita clicked their tongue, but they seemed quite satisfied. They asked the party in a loud and cheerful voice,

"Anyway, what happened this time? Why are you in such a rush?"

There had to be a reason why they left the lake forcefully and arrived so early.

Felicia came forward and replied,

"Amita, something urgent has come up, so we need to go back to the Demon King's Palace. There might be trouble which is why we hurried here to get Daphne and Karma. I'm sorry."

"Huh? Return to the Demon King's Palace? Then what about the equipment I have to make?"

They had just started the work, so there was no properly finished product.

Carack blinked and asked,

"Uh, Raccoon. Do you have something like delivery?"

"Ridiculous! I don't know when you're going to visit me again and I have no intention of delivery."

This wasn't a local blacksmith but Amita, the world's greatest blacksmith. The mention of a delivery service was ridiculous.

Carack smiled like he had expected this and continued in a sly voice,

"Then how about going with us?"

"What?"

"Didn't you say that you have to defend the last flame? Don't hide in harsh places and just come with us. There is no place safer than the Demon King's Palace."

As he spoke, Carack sneaked a peek at Daphne. She recognized what he meant and added quickly,

"It is a good idea. Amita should come with us, yes?"

"Ridiculous. It is impossible! You are only good at talking nonsense!"

Amita's eyes narrowed as they bellowed. However, Daphne, who had become familiar with Amita after two days, didn't even blink. Her expression suddenly became upset and she said in a sad voice,

"I would like to be with Amita. Does Amita not want to?"

Although it was an obvious attack, it was a highly effective one.

In-gong and Silvan looked on with anticipation and Amita's reaction was just like they had expected.

"Well, that isn't it..."

It was only half-way. So, Felicia approached Amita quickly.

"Amita, I also want to be with Amita longer. How about Caitlin?"

"Yes, that... No, Amita is amazing."

Caitlin's 'amazing' also had great effect as Amita then grabbed their chest and flinched.

However, Amita was stubborn and persuading them wasn't easy. They jumped down from Daphne's arms and cried out,

"Aish! I won't! I won't be deceived!"

It was a fairly decisive attitude, but Daphne just sighed and changed tactics.

"Amita, didn't you say that you wanted to tinker with 9th Prince's equipment?"

"Huh? Daphne, what are you talking about?"

In-gong asked with amazement. Daphne then replied in a calm tone,

"It is obviously good, but it hasn't been adjusted yet. Amita wanted to adjust the equipment to fit 9th Prince."

She was referring to the equipment belonging to elder dragons.

In-gong looked hurriedly at Amita.

“Amita?”

“Ohh, I still won’t do it!”

Handling equipment from elder dragons was a pretty big temptation for Amita.

In-gong looked down at Amita, then said suddenly,

"Please wait a moment."

In-gong headed inside the temple. Then some time passed.

As soon as In-gong returned through the entrance of the temple, Amita jumped up. Their face was startled as they glanced inside the temple and cried out,

"Heok? Really?"

Of course, there was no answer, but Amita heard something. Their shoulders sagged and they breathed a long sigh. Then they looked angrily at In-gong.

“You! What did you do to the last flame? Why did the last flame tell me to follow you?”

Amota’s tail pounded on the ground.

In-gong just laughed with a relaxed face and said to Amita,

"So, are you going with us?"

“Ohhh... it can’t be helped.”

It was the command of the last flame.

Amita disguised themselves as the user or manager of the last flame, but they were actually in a position of worship.

Amita sighed and spoke again,

"The last flame must be ready to move, so it is impossible right now. The separation isn't yet complete. It is only possible to depart tomorrow at noon."

"I understand. It also gives time for the crew of the Black Flame Dragon to rest."

They hadn't slept because they had been flying in the middle of the night. They had the time from now until noon tomorrow to rest until their fatigue was gone.

Once things were nearly settled, Silvan approached Amita. He did this because each person in the party was supposed to receive one piece of equipment from Amita.

"Excuse me, Amita, I'm also..."

"What? Why? Eh? What is it?"

Amita's anger exploded and Silvan jumped back.

"Ah, nothing."

Amita was a friend of the sword duke, so Silvan didn't want to anger them.

"Cheer up."

Carack patted Silvan's shoulder and Silvan nodded with a sullen expression.

The next day at noon...

After getting ready to leave the temple, Amita stood in front of it and hit their tail against the ground.

"Don't laugh! Absolutely do not laugh!"

Amita was carrying a small wooden box on their back like a bag. There were some unusual things carved on the wood, but it made the raccoon look cute.



"Raccoon is cute with a backpack."

Caitlin said and the rest of the party nodded with warm expressions.

In-gong refrained from laughing and asked,

"Amita, is the last flame in that box?"

"Yes, so you should protect me well."

Amita finished speaking and jumped aboard the Black Flame Dragon.

After saying goodbye to Kafran, the guardian of Spider Forest, the party didn't delay any longer.

The Black Flame Dragon opened its sails and soared up slowly. After soothing Amita's temper tantrum, Felicia headed to where Silvan was standing. It was because he seemed different from usual.

Despite the way she acted, she thought that Silvan was a good brother and Silvan and Felicia had a loving relationship. Although he might look normal to other people, Felicia knew that it wasn't the case.

"Silvan, what is with that expression?"

Silvan tried to make his normal expression, but it was clearly a little different. He looked at a distant place and smiled awkwardly.

"I will be seeing Chris soon."

It would be their first reunion after a few years of separation.

The Black Flame Dragon rode the wind. The place where the wind was leading them to was the lycanthropes' palace.

It was the land with the 7th Prince Chris Moonlight and the 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight.

# Chapter 100

## Summons #2

The biggest advantage of a flying ship was the ability to ignore the terrain.

There were no inevitable detours like there was when moving through a land route. Of course, they had to consider the air flow, but it wasn't like a carriage that had to go through a mountain or get past a river.

In order to get to the Lycanthropes' Palace from Spider Forest, they had to reach the lycanthrope territory and then cross half of it.

It would take more than 10 days on land, but it was a different story with a flying ship.

Sepira, the vice captain and navigator, calculated that it would take two to three days to reach the palace.

During that time, the party didn't sit quietly.

Amita, who was in Daphne's arms as always, gathered everyone in the captain's room, the largest room on the airship.

"Now that the rough preparations are over, I will receive individual orders."

The look on Amita's face almost looked like a human expression. It was the expression of someone who didn't want to do a chore but had accepted it anyway.

"Tell me the equipment you each desire."

Daphne was the first one to reply to Amita's words. She caressed Amita's fur and said,

"I want armor, as I mentioned before."

"Yes, I'll make a dress with embroidered protective spells."

Amita smiled and nodded. It seemed like they had already talked many times about what Daphne wanted.

Carack blinked and asked,

"Huh? Raccoon person, is that possible? Isn't it tough for you to sew?"

"Why, do you have a complaint? Eh? Do you have a complaint?"

Amita snarled at Carack, but the rest of the group just looked at Amita's little hands. The thought of a raccoon sewing with those hands was very cute.

Carack also had similar thoughts, but instead of teasing them, he just replied with a wide smile,

"No, raccoon person is very talented."

"Bah."

Amita snorted, but they didn't hate the praise.

"Well, let's keep going. Satyr, tell me your order."

Karma stared at Amita, then said in a cautious voice,

"I will ask for armor."

She hadn't participated in the fight to defend the last flame as well as the negotiation.

Amita looked Karma up and down after hearing her order.

"You prefer speed, so I'll have to make it light. It will be a partial armour. Okay, next."

Amita's gaze turned to Seira this time and she responded with a serious expression,

"I need armour that can be worn after a transformation."

"Well, I guess I'll need to make resizeable armor. It depends on the material, but the armour will basically be heavier, so the defense is higher. Is that what you want?"

"Some weight is okay. I'll use it after the transformation. I just want you to consider that I'm a warrior who uses my fists."

"Understood. I will take it into account... You?"

Amita's voice abruptly changed at the end. It was because Carack was the target.

Carack scratched his chin and grinned.

"I also want armor."

After Karma and Seira, that made three consecutive orders for armor. Daphne's order of clothes also belonged to the category of armor, so all the orders from the party so far had been armor.

Amita jumped from Daphne's arms and pounded the floor with their tail.

"Why are the orders all armor? Isn't this too much? Eh? Armour is the hardest, so are you trying to mess with me?"

The biggest piece of equipment was armour.

Carack waved his hands and shook his head like there was a misunderstanding.

"Armor is necessary. Who wouldn't want sturdy armor with the purpose of keeping them alive to come from the best craftsman? Moreover, Karma, Seira and I are the escorts of princes and princess. There are many things to be done, so it is natural that we need armor."

It was a logical claim for an orc.

Amita couldn't come up with any way to refute it, so they sighed and shook their fists. Sepira, who was standing with Silvan in a corner, stared at Carack with amazement.

Delia noticed the gaze and moved to block Sepira's view. Amita jumped back onto Daphne's lap and looked at Delia.

"You? Do you also want armor?"

Delia was an aide like Carack and Seira.

However, Delia shook her head.

"Amita, I want a shield that is small and light but has good defense and a wide range of defenses."

Delia was a dark elf and dark elves were usually highly exposed. Exposed armor naturally had a low defense, so instead of flimsy armor, she wanted a shield.

At Delia's order, Carack and the others all looked at Amita nervously. Delia's order was quite contradictory, so they thought Amita would become angry.

A shield that was small and light, yet it should have excellent defense and a wide defense range. Was that even possible?

"A shield. It is for defense, but it isn't armour. Okay, I like it."

It was likely that it was possible.

Amita nodded and Delia smiled as she returned to her seat.

The aides finished making their orders, so the only remaining ones were the royal children.

Amita turned to Caitlin first.

"What about the amazing princess?"

"Uh... um..."

Caitlin licked her lips and didn't answer immediately because she couldn't make a decision between armor and gauntlets.

Caitlin had grown up among lycanthropes who never used weapons, so she had never thought about using weapons. It was because she didn't think there was a weapon that a fists warrior could use.

However, Caitlin's thoughts changed somewhat after seeing In-gong use Earth Quaker. She wanted to have gauntlets that she could use as a weapon. However, she would also like to have armor.

While Caitlin was worrying about it, Amita started to wave their tail with impatience.

Amidst everyone's nervousness, In-gong pulled Caitlin's hand and whispered to her,

"Ask for armor. I'll give you gauntlets from my share."

Caitlin's eyes shone at In-gong's suggestion.

"Really? Is it okay?"

Everybody became curious because Caitlin's reply wasn't a whisper. In-gong grinned and nodded.

"Yes, it is."

In-gong was supposed to receive a full set from Amita.

Gauntlets and a shield were included in the full set, but In-gong already had Earth Quaker and White Eagle. So, the gauntlets and shield would be best placed somewhere else.

Caitlin would receive the gauntlets and Carack would get the shield.

It was the reason Carack selected armor instead of a shield.

Thanks to In-gong's consideration, Caitlin's worries were relieved and she smiled brightly.

"Please make me armor. Light and sturdy armor should be good."

It was the sixth defense and fifth armor order. Amita sighed as their shoulders sagged.

"I am going to be an armor craftsman. Okay, I will do it since it is your order."

Amita, whose expression had become aloof, turned toward Felicia.

"What do you want? Armor?"

The word 'armor' emerged from Amita's mouth, but their eyes were full of expectations.

Felicia was a dark elf like Delia. So, right now, she was wearing clothes that exposed her belly and her shoulders.

Felicia, who received Amita's burning gaze, covered her face with her fan. She looked somewhere else and said,

"A sword."

Sword...

It wasn't a shield or armor but a sword.

"Huh? Aren't you a magician?"

Amita asked with startled eyes. Felicia raised her fan a little bit higher and replied,

"I'm not using it. Please make a sword for Silvan."

"Felicia?"

Startled, Silvan cried out. Felicia glanced at him and muttered in a small voice,

"Well, I am a magician. I have no need for weapons or armor."

Her face was covered with a fan, but her long ears had turned red. Everyone smiled warmly as they saw Felicia's red ears.

"Felicia!"

Silvan was unable to hold back and pulled Felicia into a hug. They were a twin brother and sister, but the two of them were quite different. Felicia cried out from within Silvan's arms,

"Oh, come on! Do you want me to change my order?"

However, her face was still red. Instead of releasing Felicia, Silvan chuckled and kissed her forehead and cheeks.

"You know that Oppa loves you right?"

"I know."

Felicia responded with a small smile and Silvan laughed like he was someone who had obtained the world.

Amita nodded with a cheery expression.

"I love you too. A sword, good."

The seventh order was a weapon.

However, there was still a long way to go. Amita sighed as they looked at the person whose order would be the same amount as the previous ones combined.

"A full set... So, full body armour, shield and a helmet?"

The full set also included earrings and nose rings.

In-gong replied with a grin that was similar to Carack's.

"Please tune Earth Quaker and White Eagle as well, thank you."

"The last flame..."

Amita lamented, but the last flame was on In-gong's side. Moreover, Amita still had one more trial remaining.

"Speaking raccoon, don't forget about me. I also need to give my order."

Green Wind appeared next to In-gong. Amita looked up at Green Wind and didn't have the power to tap the floor with their tail anymore.



"What would you like?"

"Well, I want to have something that can help Master. I am Master's and Master is mine. Master, what would you like?"

The words were good for In-gong but terrible for Amita. Not just the orc, but the master and subordinates were all vicious.

In-gong smiled and stroked Green Wind's head.

"I want a special order. It is also related to the adjustment of Earth Quaker and White Eagle, so I think we should talk some more."

"It is as Master says."

Green Wind smiled at Amita who nodded.

"Yes, I'll talk to you again later. Anyway... this flying ship has a fairly large smithy. I'll start working there. Also, 9th Prince."

Amita got up and pointed at In-gong.

"Will there be a smithy at your mansion in the Demon King's Palace?"

"Yes."

In fact, it didn't have a smithy. However, he had accumulated many merits, so he would be able to install new facilities.

Once all the orders were finished, Amita covered their face with a hand.

"I'm a complete slave, a slave. I'm going to be churning out equipment. Normally, I only make one thing a year, but now, I have to make so much."

"Amita, please do it well."

Daphne hugged the lamenting Amita as if to comfort them.

The duration of ten days was long as well as short.

Amita spent the remaining nine days working.

To save time, the Black Flame Dragon didn't stop moving during the night and thanks to Sepira's navigation, they reached the Lycanthrope Palace in two days.

Although all types of magic existed in the Demon World, it was rare to find a flying ship like the Black Flame Dragon.

The black sails of the Black Flame Dragon could be called its form of identification.

The lycanthropes, who had noticed the Black Flame Dragon early on, showed fast and natural movements as they spread the news through long distance communication methods.

The designated landing site of the Black Flame Dragon was a land on the outskirts of the Lycanthrope Palace.

Flying ships were rare for lycanthropes, so there wasn't a proper landing ground at the palace. There were concerns that landing elsewhere would ruin the well-kept gardens.

With the exception of Caitlin and Seira who were returning home, the rest of the group were tense as the palace got closer.

This wasn't the Demon King's Palace but the home of the 4th Queen.

Felicia and Silvan were children of the 3rd Queen, so it was natural for them to feel nervous.

Then the Black Flame Dragon finally landed on the ground.

In-gong saw a crowd of people from the deck. 20 members of the lycanthropes' royal guards were gathered below. The person at the front was obviously the leader, Ludwig.

In-gong's gaze was directed a little bit further away. He could feel the stare even from a long distance.

The 4th Queen, Elaine Moonlight...

She looked exactly like Caitlin but was a totally different woman.

Elaine stood among the Blood Companions and laughed as she looked at In-gong.

In-gong laughed as well. Standing next to her were Chris and the lycanthrope master, Bruce.

Silvan's crew put out a set of foldable stairs.

Elaine asked with her eyes,

'Have you made a decision?'

This was referring to the suggestion she had made.

In-gong stepped forward. It was time to tell her the answer.

"Is that a pet?"

# Chapter 101

## Summons #3

"It has been a long time, 4th Queen. I am 5th Prince, Silvan Doomblade."

"It is great to see you, Silvan. How have you been?"

Silvan and Elaine greeted each other with smiles. Silvan, who had always been flamboyant, talked formally without any signs of discomfort, but Elaine seemed different.

It wasn't that Elaine's courtesy or behaviour was a problem. It was simply that her image was different from what In-gong had seen before.

Now, Elaine was literally a lady. She had Caitlin's innocent appearance, but her sophistication and subdued voice created a beautiful atmosphere.

Moreover, she spoke with honorifics. She hadn't done that when In-gong met her last time.

However, despite from In-gong's surprise, Elaine and Silvan maintained an aristocratic attitude toward each other.

"Thank you for your concern."

Silvan bowed and stepped back. This time, Felicia was the one to step forward and bow.

"6th Princess Felicia Doomblade greets the 4th Queen."

Just like Elaine, Felicia acted as a delicate lady. Unlike the usually energetic Felicia, she showed a very gentle appearance.

Elaine said with a smile,

"You seem to have become more beautiful in just a few days. I was worried due to the disturbance in Spider Forest."

Karma had asked for help from the lycanthrope rangers. It was natural for Elaine, the queen of the lycanthropes, to receive the news.

Felicia gazed downward slightly.

"Thank you for the active support from the lycanthropes. The guardian of Spider Forest asked me to thank you as well."

In fact, they hadn't received any help during the fight at Spider Forest, but the lycanthropes had still moved to aid them. Moreover, the lycanthrope rangers had agreed to watch the state of Spider Forest for a while, so it was right to express gratitude.

Elaine responded in a very friendly tone,

"You are my children as well. So, it is a normal course of action."

They didn't share a single drop of blood, but Elaine viewed them as children of the family.

Felicia stepped back while hiding her embarrassment and vigilance. Then it was Caitlin's turn.

"I'm back, Mother."

Elaine didn't respond to the light greeting. It was like she couldn't hear Caitlin's words at all.

Caitlin bit her lip and bowed.

"8th Princess Caitlin Moonlight greets the 4th Queen."

"I'm glad to see you've come back safely."

Elaine smiled widely and accepted the greeting. Caitlin looked like she wanted a hug, but Elaine didn't allow it. She turned her head and said,

"9th Prince."

Caitlin was forced to step back. In-gong swallowed his saliva and imitated Silvan's bow.

"9th Prince Shutra Ignus greets the 4th Queen."

It seemed like the same greeting, but there was a slight difference in accent and behavior.

After finishing his greeting, In-gong looked at Elaine who was showing a different smile.

"Those are good eyes."

Her voice was still gentle, but there seemed to be a beast hiding in it. Indeed, In-gong thought that she truly was different from Caitlin. The aides didn't give personal greetings, so the only one left was Daphne.

"It is great to see 4th Queen. I am Daphne, the daughter of the 5th concubine, Echo."

Her voice was full of tension, but she didn't show it in her bow. Elaine glanced at Daphne with amusement in her eyes, then moved her gaze. The raccoon, standing beside Daphne with a sour expression, caught her eyes.

"Nice to meet you. Is that a pet beside you?"

Elaine asked and the party became tense. Daphne, who had been asked directly, tried to read Amita's mood as she replied,

"Uh... that..."

"A party member."

In-gong said on behalf of Daphne. Caitlin stepped forward and added,

"This raccoon is the great Amita, Mother."

It was a slight deviation from courtesy. Everyone was already nervous due to the

raccoon's expression, but Elaine didn't dismiss her like before. She had heard the name Amita from Chris.

"Nice to meet you, Amita. Will you please forgive my rudeness that stemmed from ignorance?"

Elaine smiled while lowering her posture. Amita stared at Elaine for a while then shook their head with their arms folded.

"I forgive you."

"Thank you."

Whether it was to make Elaine uncomfortable or for some other reason, Amita did not say anymore. Elaine didn't dare say anything else to Amita and introduced Bruce who was next to her.

"This is the great Master Bruce. He is the lycanthrope that boasts the strongest power."

Master Bruce was a very big, burly man. His head was full of white hair and there were fine lines all over this face, but that was it. His muscles were tight and his body was almost as good as Carack's.

He dressed almost just like Chris, with animal hides that made him look like a bandit. In-gong could tell instantly where Chris' fashion sense had come from.

In Knight Saga, Master Bruce hadn't been present for the lycanthrope subjugation. It was because he had suddenly died two weeks before it had happened.

Bruce stared silently at In-gong. It was obvious that Chris had talked to Bruce about In-gong. Bruce's eyes reminded In-gong of the sword duke.

However, now wasn't the time or place for his personal interest.

Elaine turned around and said,

"I am surprised by the sudden summons, but you don't have to worry too much. I don't know the exact reason for the summons, but... it seems to be unrelated to the princes and princesses. Use today to relax."

Her gentleness was nice. Elaine then glanced at Chris who was standing on her right.

“Chris, can I ask you to guide your brothers and sisters?”

“Leave it to me.”

Chris replied with a rigid expression. Silvan had a somewhat complicated expression on his face, but Chris didn’t pay him any attention.

Elaine ignored the strange tension and called out to In-gong,

“9th Prince, please take a short walk with me.”

Felicia jumped and her eyes sharpened. In-gong just responded like he had already been expecting it.

“I understand.”

The party split in two.

Chris led one group to the palace while Ludwig and the Blood Companions escorted In-gong and Elaine.

Except for Ludwig, the other Blood Companions kept a considerable distance from Elaine. In-gong, Elaine and Ludwig walked ahead at a distance from where they couldn’t be heard.

As soon as they entered the garden, Elaine said quickly,

“So, have you thought about it?”

Elaine stopped talking with any honorifics.

In-gong looked slightly surprised by her sudden change in attitude, but Elaine just shrugged.

“Like I said, you are my child. Moreover, didn’t you make a commitment after learning Divine Beast Authority from Chris and Caitlin? So, I should treat you properly like my



child. Do you want a hug?"

Her mischievous smile made her very different from Caitlin. Instead of indirectly hugging an adult Caitlin, In-gong chose to speak.

"I've thought about it and I've come to a conclusion."

In-gong hesitated before cutting to the chase. Elaine laughed as she stepped forward and turned to face In-gong.

"Interesting. Can you tell me your conclusion?"

"I will become the demon king."

His voice was calm. Elaine tilted her head and asked again,

"Why?"

"I want to keep something."

Wanting to keep something...

The motivation wasn't great, but Elaine was very satisfied.

"How interesting. Isn't this purpose the same as mine?"

Elaine didn't ask what he wanted to keep. She just turned around and started walking again. In-gong walked next to her for a while before she opened her mouth again.

"Shutra, the lycanthropes will support you. As Chris already said, if you become the demon king, that will be the best outcome for all of us."

"It that so?"

"It is. Keeping the status quo isn't as easy as it sounds. It is a lie if I say I don't want things to improve."

Elaine laughed playfully, then her expression changed. Her eyes narrowed and she frowned slightly.

"If the 1st Prince, 2nd Prince or 4th Princess becomes the demon king, the lycanthropes are likely to lose our current position. Unlike the current demon king, they have a lot of people on their mothers' sides. They aren't few in number like the sura, who are foolish warriors."

The sura queen didn't participate in politics. Even Gallehed, one of the five captains, stayed at the Demon King's Palace unattended.

However, the draconians and nightmares were different.

"The dark elves will have similar worries. Win them over well. In particular, the 6th Princess and 3rd Queen... it is more important to gain their hearts than Silvan's. Well, you seem to have already gained 6th Princess' heart. I can tell by looking at her eyes."

Elaine laughed as she recalled Felicia and In-gong smiled with embarrassment.

"Is it because 5th Prince is a man?"

"You're aware of it. The dark elves are a female centered society. The women plot while the men fight bravely. It isn't 5th Prince but 6th Princess that holds the key. Moreover, 5th Prince is very dedicated to 6th Princess. It is like Chris and Caitlin but reversed."

Just as In-gong thought, Silvan was in charge of protecting Felicia.

Elained turned around and faced In-gong.

"I will treat you like my child, but our relationship is loose. After becoming the demon king, you may do something ungrateful and stab us in the back. So, I'm not expecting anything big right now. The honeymoon period has just begun, so it would be nice to build up our relationship gradually."

Elaine said that their connection was weak. In-gong was a gandharva, not a lycanthrope.

"Moreover... there are still secrets, so our relationship is far from being developed."

Elaine winked with a giggle and turned back around.

The talk about their relationship ended with this.

Then In-gong asked something else,

"Is there any more information about this summon?"

"It is like I said before. Something has happened, but it doesn't seem to be about the children of the demon king. Don't worry, the demon king isn't angry with his children."

At least it wasn't about Caitlin. If it truly was about Caitlin, then Elaine wouldn't be as peaceful as she was now.

This time, Elaine was the one who asked In-gong,

"How do you intend to return to the Demon King's Palace?"

"I will return to the Demon King's Palace with everyone else on Silvan's flying ship."

This meant they weren't going to use the transfer formation. Elaine's eyes narrowed.

"Why?"

"There is already a spotlight on the entry. This way I can give the Demon King's Palace a proper shake up."

Elaine was able to understand instantly and she laughed once again.

"I really like the way you think. Chris will actively support your idea."

Elaine stopped walking, made a 'hu' sound as she breathed out and started talking again.

"This much should be enough. It isn't good to hold you for too long. 6th Princess will be worried. Isn't she a very cute child?"

"She is a very affectionate noonim."

In-gong replied with an embarrassed expression and Elaine nodded. She tapped In-gong's shoulder lightly and said,

"Then we'll talk again later."

"I'll see you next time."

Two Blood Companions approached In-gong naturally and guided him. Elaine watched until In-gong and the Blood Companions had left the garden, then stretched her shoulders.

"How interesting. I selected well."

She had a very satisfied expression on her face, but Ludwig was different. He had a perplexed expression on his face.

"Noonim, what did he mean by shaking the palace?"

"9th Prince is already under scrutiny, so it doesn't make sense that there will be no eyes on him. They are already vigilant."

The things he had done so far were too great. Even if the demon king had called his name at the court gathering, it would be nothing if he hadn't done anything afterwards.

"Then what should be done? Take the time to relax the vigilance of the competitors? Or turn their eyes to others who aren't competitors?"

"Noonim, make it easier to understand please."

Elaine clicked her tongue at Ludwig's pathetic request. Despite leading the Blood Companions, Ludwig was overly simplistic, so Elaine explained it to her cousin.

"Silvan, that child never leaves his flying ship. If they use the transport formation, then Silvan has to go back alone on his flying ship. This appearance isn't suitable."

"Appearance?"

"Think about it. Not one or two, but five child of the demon king have gathered and they are returning to the Demon King's Palace like that. Can their loving brothers and sisters look on and laugh?"

Ludwig's eyes widened, then he started counting off with his fingers.

"5, 6, 7, 8, 9... That's more than half the number."

Five out of the nine royal children.

"Yes, that's more than half of them. They don't have influence yet, but it is definitely impressive. Additionally, they are a group that had never previously gone together. There is no choice but to look for the link. People will think about who is at the center of the crowd."

Then the answer would quickly emerge.

They would be able to tell instantly and Chris was going to create that atmosphere.

"Isn't this likely to make them more vigilant?"

Ludwig asked in a concerned voice. Elaine shook her head.

"As I mentioned earlier, they are already wary. Moreover, 9th Prince is different from the other princes and princesses... I want them to show it to the Demon King's Palace, that a new faction has appeared in the Demon King's Palace."

It wasn't just to show off their power to the other children of the demon king. There were others they wanted to show...

The nobles of the Demon King's Palace.

There were also the children of the concubines who hadn't yet chosen a master.

Additionally, there were merchants who were unaffiliated.

"What do you think? It seems to be a bit rushed, but I like it."

There were now four factions in the Demon King's Palace, not just three. Moreover, the fourth faction wasn't insignificant.

Elaine exhaled. The playfulness disappeared and she said with a mother's face,

"It might just be a feeling, but I feel I can leave it to that child."

"Noonim?"

Elaine didn't say anything more. She shook her head and walked with a wolf-like look.

"Let's go back."

Elaine didn't look back and headed straight to the main hall.

A day passed.

After Silvan joined Chris, he became significantly less talkative and it was the same for Chris.

Even when the Black Flame Dragon left the lycanthrope territory, the awkward silence between the two people continued. However, both of them showed their usual appearance when the other was absent.

In-gong was curious about what happened between the two of them but found it hard to ask.

Then after a few days...

While Amita designed blueprints and In-gong and Caitlin practiced with the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core, the Black Flame Dragon continued flying to the Demon King's Palace.

Carack, who was standing next to In-gong and watching the full moon, turned to In-gong and asked,

"By the way, I feel a little anxious. Something unforeseen always happens with the demon king. I'm sure that it will explode this time as well."

Carack had already determined that there would be an incident.

In-gong poked Carack's side.

"Hey, what basis do you have for saying that?"

"Prince is the basis. You are the reason. And Prince, hasn't Prince learnt from your own history?"

"Why should I learn?"

"What happened in the past will happen in the future. It is like that for all people. It isn't an exaggeration to say that Prince's history guarantees that things will happen in the future."

Carack laughed and In-gong fell silent. He wanted to refute it but couldn't think of any words.

In the first court gathering, the demon king had called one of his children's names for the first time.

In the second court gathering, he had given In-gong a mission... A mission that everyone had thought belonged to Zephyr.

If so, what would happen this time?

"Patterns can be broken."

"I have my doubts, but won't we know once we arrive?"

Carack responded effortlessly to In-gong's defense and waved abruptly. In-gong glanced over to see Sepira smiling widely. It was an expression he had seen on Daphne, Seira, Delia and Karma's faces.

"Why are you looking at me like that?"

"My aide really is an orc."

"Of course, I am an orc. Or am I an ogre?"

Carack just laughed while In-gong wondered why he had the pheromone effects of a

main character.

Then two days later...

The party arrived at the Demon King's Palace.





PDF by: traitor#ZEN